

606824-

THE
SECOND FRENCH BOOK

H. BUÉ'S
NEW CONVERSATIONAL FRENCH COURSE.

THE ILLUSTRATED FRENCH PRIMER.

Or, the Child's First French Lessons, with numerous Illustrations.
160 pages, crown 8vo, cloth, 1s. 6d.

EARLY FRENCH LESSONS.

64 pages, cloth, price 8d.

THE FIRST FRENCH BOOK.

Grammar, Conversation, and Translation. 200 pages, cloth, 10d.

THE SECOND FRENCH BOOK.

Grammar, Conversation, and Translation. 212 pages, cloth, price 1s.

FIRST STEPS IN FRENCH IDIOMS.

192 pages, cloth, 1s. 6d.

KEY TO THE FIRST AND SECOND BOOKS AND TO
THE FIRST STEPS IN FRENCH IDIOMS.

(For Teachers only.) Cloth, 2s. 6d.

ONE HUNDRED AND FIFTEEN SUPPLEMENTARY
EXERCISES TO THE FIRST FRENCH BOOK.

126 pages, cloth, 10d.

THE ELEMENTARY CONVERSATIONAL FRENCH READER.

80 pages, limp cloth, 6d.

THE NEW CONVERSATIONAL FIRST FRENCH READER.

224 pages, cloth, 10d.

EASY FRENCH DIALOGUES.

80 pages, limp cloth, 6d.

A PRIMER OF FRENCH COMPOSITION.

*For full Particulars of the Course see Announcements at end
of Volume.*

SECOND FRENCH BOOK

GRAMMAR, EXERCISES, CONVERSATION AND TRANSLATION

Drawn up for the Requirements of the Second Year
and adopted by the School Board for London, and
by the Minister of Education for Canada

With Two Complete Vocabularies

EDITED BY

HENRI BUÉ, B. ès L. (UNIV. GALL.)

OFFICIER D'ACADÉMIE

PRINCIPAL FRENCH MASTER, CHRIST'S HOSPITAL, LONDON
FORMERLY EXAMINER IN THE UNIVERSITY OF LONDON

NEW EDITION

LIBRAIRIE HACHETTE & C^{ie}

LONDON: 18 KING WILLIAM STREET, CHANCING CROSS

PARIS: 79 BOULEVARD SAINT-GERMAIN

BOSTON: CARL SCHÖENHOFF

1897

All rights reserved

PREFACE.

IN the preface to the seventh edition (1877) of its Dictionary, the French Academy, referring to the innovations it has introduced, says: "The grave accent has been substituted for the acute in the words **piège, siège, collège**, and in similar words." The Editor of the SECOND FRENCH BOOK has naturally adopted this reform which is an excellent one, as will be seen by what follows.

French words ending in a consonant between two **e**'s take a grave accent on the first **e** if the last **e** is mute, *e.g.*, *chère*, dear; *j'espère*, I hope. But, for some unaccountable reason, this rule had the following exception: words ending in *ège*, although pronounced as if they had a grave accent, must be written with an acute accent, thus: *collège*, college: *je protège*, I protect. The French Academy has very sensibly done away with this extraordinary anomaly, and spells now with a grave accent **collège, je protège**, etc.

M. E. LITTRÉ makes a remark under *collège* and *collègue*, in his admirable Dictionary, which evidently suggested this reform; and it must be no small triumph for him to see it carried out by the Academy.

THE FIRST FRENCH BOOK has met with so favourable a reception, both here and in Canada, that the second volume has been got up on exactly the same plan, with the following additions, however, which the Editor trusts will prove useful: "Idioms and Hints," "Selections for translating from English into French," "Examination Papers," "a Synopsis of the rules contained in the first volume," and an "Alphabetical Index."

October, 1878.

PREFACE TO THE NEW EDITION.

"How would you advise us to use that French Book of yours?"—"Why don't you give us more sentences in your exercises?" are questions which have been put to me by some of the kind friends who patronise my First and Second French Books.

In answer to the first question I generally give the following hints:—

1. Allow your pupils a few minutes to study the rules and examples.
2. Make them translate the Model Exercise and ask them to explain the rule applied in each, as if they wanted to teach *you* that rule; set that same Model Exercise as a lesson for the next class.
3. Make them write out the sentences from English into French, and after they have been corrected let them go through those sentences again *vivâ voce*.

Never do more than one lesson a week in order to leave time for translation and *repetition of back work*. Boys do not get tired of writing out the same exercise over and over again, provided you *keep their work* and can prove to them that they have improved each time that they have done the Exercise.

This is but a rough sketch of what may be done; much must be left, of course, to the taste and judgment of the master.

— To the second question I usually answer : Whenever, in examining a school, I find that the French composition in the highest class is full of gross mistakes and not worth reading, I also find that in the lower classes of that same school the boys have been in the habit of doing numberless exercises, and cannot write out correctly a single sentence contained in those exercises.

In short, twenty-two years' experience in teaching convinces me that the good old rule, "Do a little well," is the only one that pays in the long run.

December, 1884.

H. B.

CONTENTS.

	<i>Page</i>
Hints for Dictation	1, 2
Idioms	2-61
The Letters	3
Accents	4
Verbs	5-15, 52-54
Verbs and Prepositions	55-56
Nouns	16-20, 82, 83
Genders	16-18, 63-75
The Article	22, 79-81
Qualifying Adjectives	23-26, 84-86
Degrees of Comparison	27
Possessive Adjectives	31
Indefinite Adjectives	32, 34
Numerals	29
Personal Pronouns	36-40, 95-97
Possessive Pronouns	41, 42
Demonstrative Pronouns	43, 97
Indefinite Pronouns	43-45
Relative Pronouns	46-49
Interrogative Pronouns	50
Auxiliaries	66, 67
Participle (present)	68, 69

CONTENTS.

	<i>Page</i>
Participle (past)	70, 72
Imperfect indicative	73, 74
Past definite, perfect and passive	75
Subjunctive	76-79
Prepositions	87-89
Adverbs	90-92
Conjunctions	93-95
En and y	95, 96
Ce and il	97, 98
Interjections	99
Alphabetical list of irregular verbs	100-119
Synopsis of the "First French Book"	120-135
French conversation	136-147
"Open Sesame!"	148-150
Reading lessons	151-165
Selections for French composition	166-168
French-English Vocabulary	169-183
English-French Vocabulary	183-189
Examination Papers	191-196
Alphabetical Index	197-200

ABBREVIATIONS.

INDICAT.	indicative	<i>p.d.</i>	past definite
SUBJ.	subjunctive	<i>f.</i>	future
IMPT.	imperative	<i>c.</i>	conditional
<i>pr.</i>	present	<i>ppr.</i>	present participle
<i>imp.</i>	imperfect	<i>pp.</i>	past participle
<i>m.</i>	masculine	<i>pl.</i>	plural
<i>i.e.</i>	id est (that is)	<i>c.g.</i>	exempli gratiâ. (for example)

FIRST PART.

GRAMMAR.



LESSON I.

N.B.—The Synopsis of the “First Book,” comprising §§ 1-134, will be found on pages 120-135.

HINTS FOR WRITING TO DICTATION.

135. Every syllable is pronounced distinctly in French; only those syllables containing an *e mute* are slurred over. The stress is invariably on the last syllable pronounced. Pay particular attention to the sounds *en, in, on*, so as not to confound them.

136. *Le Français*, with a capital *F*, means the Frenchman, *le français*, with a small *f*, means the French language; the same is to be observed for *Anglais*, etc., etc.; names expressing nationality, when used as adjectives, begin with a small letter: *un cheval anglais*, an English horse.

137. When the person who is dictating gives the following indications do not mistake them for

part of the piece dictated: *En titre*, means, write down as a title; *à la ligne*, begin a fresh line; *virgule*, comma; *point et virgule*, semicolon; *deux points*, colon; *un point*, a full stop; *point d'interrogation*, note of interrogation; *point d'exclamation*, note of exclamation; *ouvrez les guillemets ... fermez les guillemets*, put between inverted commas; *ouvrez la parenthèse...fermez la parenthèse*, put between brackets; *un tiret*, a dash; *points suspensifs*, dots indicating interruption.

Learn § 1 of the *Conversation*.

Exercise I.

QUESTIONS:—What is meant by 'guillemets,' 'points suspensifs,' 'en titre,' 'à la ligne'? On what syllable is the stress in 'bonjour,' 'beaucoup,' 'commencement,' 'paresse,' 'paresseux,' 'ils aiment.' Write down the French for 'the German,' 'the German language.'

N.B.—The words of the exercises throughout the book will be found in the Vocabularies.

IDIOMS AND HINTS.

good morning {	<i>bonjour</i>
good afternoon)	
good evening	<i>bonsoir</i>
good night	<i>bonne nuit</i>
good-bye	<i>adieu</i>
we shall meet again	<i>au revoir</i>
	<i>au plaisir de vous revoir.</i>

LESSON II.

THE LETTERS.

138. The consonants and the vowels, named as in the Synopsis, number 1, are masculine, except : *f, h, l, m, n, r, s*, which are feminine.

139. The following is a short list of words in which the *h* is aspirated : *le héros*, the hero ; *un huit*, an eight ; *le haut*, the top ; *le haricot*, the haricot bean : *le hasard*, chance : *la haine*, hatred ; *le hanneton*, the cockchafer ; *la hache*, the axe ; *le houx*, the holly.

N.B.—In the derivations of *héros*, *h* is mute : *l'héroïne*, *l'héroïsme* ; it is mute in *l'hameçon*, the fish-hook.

Learn § 2 of the *Conversation*.

Exercise 2.

QUESTIONS:—What is the gender of the following letters : *z, o, k, l, i, s, b, h* ? Which of the following *h*'s are aspirated : *huit, héroïne, houx, hameçon, héros, haricot, héroïsme, haut* ? Put the definite article before *haine, houx, hanneton, hache*.

IDIOMS.

to be thirsty, hungry, cold, hot, right, wrong	<i>avoir soif, faim, froid, chaud, raison, tort</i>
at home	<i>{ chez nous chez vous chez eux, etc.</i>
allow me to introduce my friend to you	<i>permettez-moi de vous pré- senter mon ami</i>
to get up late (late in the day)	<i>se lever tard</i>
to get up late (later than an appointed time)	<i>se lever en retard.</i>

LESSON III.

ON ACCENTS.

140. Words distinguishable only by the presence or absence of an accent : *là*, there, *la*, the ; *à*, to, *a*, has ; *où*, where, *ou*, or ; *dû*, owed, *du*, of the ; *sûr*, certain, *sur*, on ; *dès*, from, etc., *des*, of the ; *crû*, increased, *cru*, believed ; *mûr*, ripe, *mur*, wall. Mark the difference of accents in *dès*, as soon as, and *dés*, thimbles, dice ; in *pêcher*, to fish, and *pécher*, to sin.

141. Words, which end in a consonant between two e's, take a grave accent on the e preceding the consonant, if the e following the consonant is mute (see Preface). Examples : *chère*, dear ; *j'espère*, I hope ; *le collège*, the college ; *le poète*, the poet ; *le poème*, the poem ; *la grève*, the strike.

142. The circumflex accent. The first and second persons plural of the past definite indicative, and the third person singular of the imperfect subjunctive of all verbs, take the circumflex accent : *nous dîmes*, *vous dîtes*, *qu'il dît*, from *dire*, to say.

143. Verbs in *-aitre*, *-oître* take a circumflex accent on the letter *i* when it is followed by *t* ; thus : *il connaît*, he knows ; *il croît*, from *croître*, he grows.

Learn § 3 of the *Conversation*.

Exercise 3.

QUESTIONS :—Give the English for *pêcher, ou, dés, mur, sûr, dû*. Put the proper accents on *pere*, father; *pêcher*, to sin; *dés*, from; *greve*, strike; *chere*, dear; *nous parlames*, we spoke; *qu'il fit*, that he might do; *il croit*, from *croire*, he believes; *il croit*, from *croître*, he grows, *il connait*, he knows. What kind of words always have a grave accent on the penultimate (the last syllable but one)?

he is late	<i>il est en retard</i>
it is late	<i>il est tard</i>
how old are you?	<i>quel âge avez-vous?</i>
I am fifteen	<i>j'ai quinze ans</i>
he is at dinner	<i>il est à dîner</i>
	<i>il est en train</i>

LESSON IV.

VERBS.

• **I44.** The reflexive pronoun of a reflexive verb (§ 132) follows immediately the pronoun subject: *je me repose*, I rest, *tu te reposes*, *il se repose*, *nous nous reposons*, *vous vous reposez*, *ils se reposent*.

For those parts of the verb which have no personal pronoun in the other verbs, **se** is used: **se reposer**, **se reposant**.

The reflexive pronoun is put after the verb in the imperative: **repose-toi**, **reposons-nous**, **reposez-vous**.

145. All reflexive verbs take the **auxiliary être**: I have rested, *je me suis reposé*; I had rested, *je m' étais reposé*.

A verb not reflexive in English may be reflexive in French, as: **se reposer**, to rest; **se repentir**, to repent; and many others.

Learn § 4 of the *Conversation*.

Model Exercise.

1. S'est-il amusé? 2. Il s'est amusé. 3. Ne se promènera-t-il pas? 4. Elles se sont repenties (§ 134). 5. Habillez-vous vite. 6. Ne vous dépêchez pas tant. 7. Hâtons-nous. 8. Qu'ils ne se hâtent pas.

Exercise 4.

1. You will repent. 2. He does not make haste. 3. He does not dress quickly. 4. Do not hurt yourself. 5. Go for a walk. 6. We did not enjoy ourselves. 7. They fought bravely. 8. Did they not fight bravely?

IDIOMS.

take this book	<i>prenez ce livre</i>
take this book to your father	<i>portez ce livre à votre père</i>
take this book away with you	<i>emportez ce livre</i>
take this child to school	<i>menez or conduisez cet enfant à l'école</i>
take this child away	<i>emmenez cet enfant.</i>

LESSON V.

VERBS.—(Continued.)

146. Impersonal verbs are those which have only the third person singular. The following are irregular in some of their tenses:—

Pleuvoir (to rain); INDICAT. *pr.* il pleut (it rains); *imp.*, il pleuvait; *p.d.*, il plut; *f.*, il pleuvra; *c.*, il pleuvrait; SUBJ. *pr.*, qu'il pleuve; *imp.*, qu'il plût; *impt.* (none); *p.pr.*, pleuvant; *p.p.*, plu.

147. Falloir (to be necessary); INDICAT. *pr.*, il faut; *imp.*, il fallait; *p.d.*, il fallut; *f.*, il faudra; *c.*, il faudrait; SUBJ. *pr.*, qu'il faille; *imp.*, qu'il fallût; *impt.* (none); *p.p.*, fallu.—I must, I ought, etc., are translated by the tenses of *falloir*.

Both the above verbs have the auxiliary *avoir*, and form their compound tenses like all other verbs. (See § 128.)

Learn § 5 of the *Conversation*.

Model Exercise.

1. Il a beaucoup plu aujourd'hui. 2. Il ne pleuvra pas demain. 3. Il désirait qu'il plût. 4. Il faudra venir après-demain. 5. Il fallait venir hier. 6. Il aurait fallu venir avant-hier.

Exercise 5.

N.B.—The word [*drop*] between brackets means that the preceding word must not be translated.

1. You [*drop*] must go to the post-office. 2. You [*drop*] ought to (*past conditional*) have gone out (*infinitive pr.*). 3. It has not rained since yesterday. 4. They wish that it may rain. 5. It will rain all (*use the article*) day. 6. You [*drop*] ought to (*imperfect*) have arrived (*infinitive*) yesterday.

IDIOMS AND HINTS.

Time is *fois* in :

this time	<i>cette fois</i>
another time	<i>une autre fois</i>
the first time	<i>la première fois</i>
once, twice, etc.	<i>une fois, deux fois, etc.</i>
how many times	<i>combien de fois</i>
next time	<i>la prochaine fois</i>
at the same time	<i>à la fois.</i>

LESSON VI.

VERBS—(Continued.)

148. The impersonal verb *y avoir* takes the auxiliary *avoir* to form its compound tenses.

y avoir (there to be); INDICAT. *pr.*, il y a (there is *or* there are); *imp.*, il y avait; *p.d.*, il y eut; *f.*, il y aura; *c.*, il y aurait; SUBJ. *pr.*, qu'il y ait; *imp.*, qu'il y eût; *impt.* (none); *p.pr.*, y ayant; *p.p.*, y eu (used only to form the compound tenses).

149. *N.B.*—**y**, in every case, is placed immediately before the verb; thus, in the compound tenses:—*il y avait eu, qu'il y eût eu*, etc.; when the verb is used interrogatively, **y a-t-il?** (for the **t**, see § 109); or negatively, *il n'y a pas*; or both *n'y a-t-il pas?*

150. Remark that 'there is' and 'there are' are both translated by *il y a*, because French impersonal verbs have no plural.

151. On some strange-looking regular verbs.—The following parts of the verbs *cré-er*, to create; *pri-er*, to pray, and of others conjugated like them are formed regularly (see § 127),

and are quite correct: *p.p.*, cré-é, cré-ée, cré-ées ;
 INDICAT. *imp.*, nous pri-ions ; SUBJ. *pres.*, que nous
 pri-ions.

Learn § 6 of the *Conversation*.

Model Exercise.

1. Qu'y a-t-il ? signifie ' what's the matter ? '
2. Qu'est-ce qu'il y a ? signifie la même chose.
3. N'y avait-il pas beaucoup de fautes dans votre thème ? 4. Oui, mais il n'y aura pas de fautes demain. 5. Il faut que nous priions notre maître de nous donner un congé. 6. Ces fantômes ont été créés par son imagination.

Exercise 6.

1. Was there not a concert here yesterday ?
2. Yes, and there will be a concert to-morrow. 3. You [*drop*] must ask (*prier*) your father to (*de*) give you that book. 4. What's the matter ? 5. She was created by the imagination of a poet. 6. Will there not be a lecture here this evening ?

IDIOMS AND HINTS.

Time is *heure* for the time of day, the hour :
 what is the time ? *quelle heure est-il ?*
 do you know the time ? *savez-vous l'heure ?*
 { *à l'heure*
 in time { *à temps*

Time is *mesure* in :

To keep time *jouer en mesure*
 to beat time *battre la mesure.*

LESSON VII.

VERBS.—(Continued.)

152. Irregular verbs.—We shall call irregular all verbs whose conjugation differs in any way from that of *donner*, *punir*, *recevoir*, *rompre* (see Synopsis). If the regular verbs and the formation of tenses (see §§ 125 to 131) have been well mastered, the difficulty of learning the irregular verbs will be considerably reduced. (See also “stems” and “termination,” § 115).

153. Verbs in -cer.—In order to keep the **c** soft throughout in verbs in **-cer**—like *pincer*, to pinch—put a cedilla (see § 3) under the **c** whenever the termination begins with an **a** or an **o**: *nous pinç-**ons***, *je pinç-**ais***.

154. Verbs in -ger.—In order to keep the **g** soft throughout in verbs in **-ger**—like *manger*, to eat, put an **e** after the **g** whenever the termination begins with an **a** or an **o**: *nous mang**e**-**ons***, *je mang**e**-**ais***.

Learn § 7 of the *Conversation*.

Model Exercise.

1. Qu'effacez - vous sur votre ardoise ?
 2. Nous effaçons notre addition. 3. Ils rangeaient leurs livres. 4. Plaçons nos cahiers dans nos pupitres. 5. Vous annoncerez cette bonne nouvelle à vos parents. 6. Il aurait fallu qu'il partageât le gâteau en quatre.

Exercise 7.

1. Put your books back on the shelf. 2. They ought to have shared this with us. 3. I was putting away my slate, my pencil, and my sponge. 4. Let us place this picture elsewhere. 5. What word are you scratching out in your dictation? 6. We are scratching out the word "virgule."

IDIOMS AND HINTS.

to meet by chance	<i>rencontrer</i>
to go and meet a friend	<i>aller à la rencontre d'un ami</i>
all right	<i>c'est bien</i>
that's right	<i>c'est bon</i>
early	<i>à la bonne heure</i>
presently	<i>de bonne heure</i>
	<i>tout à l'heure.</i>

LESSON VIII.

VERBS.—(Continued.)

155. Verbs in -eler and -eter, like *appeler*, to call; *jeter*, to throw, double the **l** and the **t** whenever they are followed by an **e** mute: *j'appell-e*, *j'appell-erai*, *je jett-e*, *je jett-erai*; thus: *atteler*, to put horses to; *épeler*, to spell, etc.

156. EXCEPTIONS.—A certain number of verbs in -eler and -eter, like *peler*, to peel; *acheter*, to buy, instead of doubling the **l** or the **t**, put a **grave accent** on the **e** preceding the **t** or the **l** whenever those consonants are followed by an **e** mute: *je pèl-e*, *je pèle-rai*; *j'achèt-e*, *j'achèt-erai*; thus: *geler*, to freeze; *harceler*, to harass; *racheter*, to buy again; *étiqueter*, to label; also verbs in -ever and -ener; *lever*, to raise, *je lève*; *achever*,

to finish, *j'achève* ; *mener*, to lead, *je mène*. (See § 141.)

Learn § 8 of the *Conversation*.

Model Exercise.

1. Épelez les mots 'nous appellerons.'
2. Comment appelait-il cela ? 3. Epelle 'je pèle, il jette, et tu achètes.' 4. Nous achèverons notre thème plus tard. 5. Non, achevez-le maintenant. 6. 'Je ramène, nous emmenons et ils se promènent' suivent la même règle que 'mener.'

Exercise 8.

1. The French verbs 'to bring back,' 'to walk,' and 'to lead,' follow the same rule as 'to lead away.' 2. Examples :— 'We bring back,' 'bring thou back,' 'he leads,' 'he will walk.' 3. Let us spell :— 'We throw,' 'he throws,' 'we shall peel,' and 'he buys.' 4. I am finishing my translation. 5. We call them. 6. I do not call you.

IDIOMS AND HINTS.

this day week	<i>d'aujourd'hui en huit</i>
a week ago	<i>il y a aujourd'hui huit jours</i>
every day	<i>tous les jours</i>
all day	<i>tout le jour</i>
the whole day	<i>toute la journée</i>
every other day	<i>de deux jours l'un, and tous les deux jours</i>
from day to day	<i>de jour en jour.</i>

LESSON IX.

VERBS.—(Continued.)

157. Verbs in *-éter*, *-égèr*, with an *acute accent* on the *e* before the consonants *t* and *g*, change the acute accent into a *grave* before an

e mute, except in the future and conditional : *répéter*, to repeat, *je répète*, but *je répéterai*, *je répéterais* ; *protéger*, to protect, *je protège*, but *je protégerai*, *je protégerais*. (See Preface.)

158. Verbs in -oyer, change the **y** into **i** whenever it is followed by an **e** mute : *employer*, to employ, *j'emploie*. Verbs in **-ayer** keep the **y** throughout : *payer*, to pay, *je paye* (*je paie*, &c., is often met with, however).

159. The second person singular of the imperative, in verbs of the first conjugation, has no **s**, except when **y** and **en** (the pronoun, not the preposition) follow : IMPT. *va*, from *aller*, *vas-y*, go there ; IMPT. *porte*, from *porter*, *portes-y ce banc*, take that bench there ; *voici des pommes*, *portes-en à ton frère*, here are some apples, take some to your brother ; as to *va* before *en*, many prefer never to put an *s*.

Learn § 9 of the *Conversation*, and the verb *aller*.

N.B.—The verbs to be learnt by heart, and given after the lessons, will be found in the *Alphabetical List of Verbs*.

Model Exercise.

1. Dans le Dictionnaire de l'Académie j'ai trouvé 'collège,' 'poète' et 'je protège' avec un accent grave. 2. Il le répète, répétons-le. 3. Vous ne le répéterez plus. 4. Qui paye ses dettes s'enrichit. 5. Tu vas dans le jardin, portes-y cette chaise. 6. Tu as des plumes, donnes-en à ton camarade. 7. Ton père est là, vas-y. 8. Emploie bien ton temps.

Exercise 9.

1. I repeat; I shall not repeat; that he may repeat. 2. My cousin is in the garden, go there. 3. He protects the weak. 4. The enemies are besieging the city. 5. I found in the Dictionary of the Academy the words 'poem' and 'siege' with a grave accent. 6. If you have any money, give (*singular*) some to the poor. 7. They will employ many workmen. 8. Do not employ it.

IDIOMS.

I wonder whether	{ <i>je suis curieux de savoir si</i> <i>je me demande si</i>
I heard it from him	{ <i>je le tiens de lui</i> <i>je le lui ai entendu dire</i>
tell him so	<i>dites-le-lui.</i>

LESSON X.

VERBS.—(*Continued.*)

160. S'en aller, to go away; **INDICAT.**, *pr.*, je m'en vais, tu t'en vas, il s'en va, nous nous en allons, vous vous en allez, ils s'en vont; *imp.*, je m'en allais, tu t'en allais, il s'en allait, nous nous en allions, vous vous en alliez, ils s'en allaient; *p.d.*, je m'en allai, tu t'en allas, il s'en alla, nous nous en allâmes, vous vous en allâtes, ils s'en allèrent; *f.*, je m'en irai, tu t'en iras, il s'en ira, nous nous en irons, vous vous en irez, ils s'en iront; *c.*, je m'en irais, tu t'en irais, il s'en irait, nous nous en irions, vous vous en iriez, ils s'en iraient; **SUBJ.**, *pr.*, que je m'en aille, que tu t'en ailles, qu'il s'en aille, que nous nous en allions, que vous vous en alliez, qu'ils s'en aillent; *imp.*,

que je m'en allasse, que tu t'en allasses, qu'il s'en allât, que nous nous en allassions, que vous vous en allassiez, qu'ils s'en allassent ; *IMPT.*, va-t'en, allons-nous-en, allez-vous-en ; *p. pr.*, s'en allant ; *p. p.*, en allé.

As *s'en aller* is reflexive, it takes *être* in the compound tenses (*see* § 145) : *je m'en suis allé*.

161. En is always placed immediately before the verb.—*s'en aller* is used negatively (*see* § 102) and interrogatively (*see* § 108) like any other verb : *m'en irai-je ? s'en est-il allé ? il ne s'en ira pas, il ne s'en est pas allé, ne s'en est-il pas allé ?*

N.B.—Parts of irregular verbs will be given in several of the following lessons, but the pupil will do well to learn, besides, one or two of the irregular verbs contained in the Alphabetical List.

Learn § 10 of the *Conversation*, and the verb *venir*.

Model Exercise.

1. Quel est l'auxiliaire de *s'en aller* ? 2. Le verbe *être* ; il faut dire qu'il s'en fût allé, nous vous en serions allés. 3. Quand t'en iras-tu ? 4. Je ne m'en irai pas. 5. Ne s'en était-il pas allé ? 6. Pourquoi s'en serait-il allé ? 7. Allez-vous-en tout de suite. 8. Non, ne vous en allez pas.

Exercise 10.

1. I shall go away. Oh ! do not go away. 2. Go away directly. 3. Has he gone away ? 4. That they might have gone away. 5. That we may go away, and that they may also go away. 6. What is the auxiliary of 'to go

away' in French? 'To be' is the auxiliary, thus: 'we shall have gone away.' 7. Having gone away. 8. We would have gone away.

IDIOMS.

I cannot afford to	{ <i>je n'ai pas les moyens de</i> <i>mes moyens ne me permettent</i> <i>pas de</i> <i>je ne suis pas assez riche pour</i>
how long have you been here?	{ <i>depuis quand êtes-vous ici?</i> <i>combien de temps y a-t-il que</i> <i>vous êtes ici?</i>

LESSON XI.

NOUNS.

162. Are masculine:—1. Names of male beings, except some titles, as *Sa Majesté le roi*, His Majesty the King. 2. Trees and shrubs, except *la vigne*, the vine. 3. Days, months, colours and languages, as *le français*, French.

4. Nouns ending in a sounded vowel or diphthong, except *la clé*, the key; *la peau*, the skin.

5. Nouns ending in a consonant, except *la main*, the hand; *la leçon*, the lesson.

6. Nouns ending in *e* mute preceded by two consonants not the same, as *un arbre*, a tree; *le sable*, the sand; except *la table*, the table.

7. Names of countries *not ending in e* mute, as *le Canada*. For the peculiarities of *gens*, see pp. 63-68.

Learn § 11 of the *Conversation*, and the verb *dire*.

Model Exercise.

1. Sa Majesté le roi de Hollande est venu à Paris. 2. La vigne de notre voisin est morte. 3. Il a ouvert cette armoire avec la clé. 4. Nous sommes tous nés au Canada. 5. Il a bien dit sa leçon et mal fait son thème. 6. La table est couverte d'un sable fin.

Exercise II.

1. They were not all born in (*au*) Brazil. 2. There is not enough sand on the paths. 3. I have not the key of this cupboard. 4. Have you seen (*vu*) the king? No; His Majesty is ill. 5. This vine is growing well. 6. He has hurt his brother's hand. 7. He has taken my book. 8. You have come. He is dead. 9. They have read the letter. 10. We have done and we have said many things.

Irregular verbs.—The past participle is a primary or primitive part of the verb; it forms all the compound tenses (with the help of *avoir* or *être*), whether the verb is regular or not; many verbs are irregular in the *p.p.* Infinitive, *aller*, to go, *p.p.*, *allé*; *venir*, to come, *p.p.*, *venu*; *mourir*, to die, *p.p.*, *mort*; *naître*, to be born, *p.p.*, *né*; all conjugated with *être*. *Dire*, to say, *p.p.*, *dit*; *faire*, to make, *p.p.*, *fait*; *lire*, to read, *p.p.*, *lu*; *prendre*, to take, *p.p.*, *pris*; *ouvrir*, to open, *p.p.*, *ouvert*; all conjugated with *avoir*.

IDIOMS.

don't take the trouble	<i>ne vous donnez pas la peine</i>
don't trouble	<i>ne vous dérangez pas</i>
sorry to give you the trouble	<i>fâché de vous donner cette</i>
he is in pain	<i>il souffre</i> [<i>peine</i>]
what do you charge?	<i>combien prenez-vous?</i>
a wine glass	<i>un verre à vin</i>
a glass of wine	<i>un verre de vin.</i>

LESSON XII.

NOUNS—(Continued.)

163. Are feminine:—1. Names of female beings, of virtues, vices (the word vice, *le vice*, is masc.), flowers, and fruits; except: *le réséda*, the mignonette; *le muguet*, the lily of the valley; *le coing*, the quince.

2. Nouns in **-eur**, except: *le bonheur*, happiness; *le malheur*, misfortune; *un honneur*, honour; *le déshonneur*, dishonour; *le cœur*, heart; *le labeur*, toil.

3. Names of countries ending in **e** mute, like **la France**; except: *le Mexique*, Mexico.

4. Nouns ending in an **e** mute preceded by a vowel, as **la pluie**; except: *le parapluie*, *le musée*.

5. Nouns ending in an **e** mute preceded by a doubled consonant; except: *le verre*, the glass; *le beurre*, the butter.

6. Nouns ending in **-aison, -sion, -tion, -xion**, as **la maison**, the house; **une occasion**, an occasion.

Learn § 12 of the *Conversation*, and *faire*.

Model Exercise.

1. Où vas-tu? Je vais au musée. 2. Que faites-vous? J'étudie le genre des substantifs. 3. Ont-ils trouvé leur parapluie? 4. Ils disent qu'ils ne l'ont pas encore trouvé. 5. Ils vien-

ment apporter du beurre, de belles fleurs, du réséda; quel bonheur! 6. Ils font des erreurs grossières dans leur traduction qui est longue.

Exercise 12.

1. The mignonette is a flower; the quince is a fruit. 2. Here is an umbrella to (*pour*) keep the rain off you. 3. What is, in French, the gender of 'butter,' 'error,' and 'misfortune?' 4. The museum is far from here. 5. 'The reason,' 'the passion,' 'the season,' 'the house,' and 'the occasion' are all of the same gender. 6. They come—they go. 7. You make the pens, we make the holders. 8. They say what (*ce que*) you say. 9. I go, thou goest, he goes.

Irregular verbs.—The indicative present: this tense forms the imperative. There are many verbs irregular in some person or other of the present indicative. Infinitive, *aller*, to go, INDICAT. *pr.*, je vais, tu vas, il va, nous allons, vous allez, ils vont;—*venir*, to come; je viens, tu viens, il vient, nous venons, vous venez, ils viennent;—*faire*, to make; je fais, tu fais, il fait, nous faisons, vous faites, ils font;—*dire*, to say; je dis, tu dis, il dit, nous disons, vous dites, ils disent.

Chance in French means generally 'good luck':

he is lucky
good luck to you
how lucky!
he stands no chance
by chance
the dining room

il a de la chance
je vous souhaite bonne chance
quelle chance!
il n'a aucune chance de réussir
par hasard
la salle à manger.

LESSON XIII.

THE PLURAL OF NOUNS.

(See Synopsis, 11—18.)

164. The plural of *monsieur*, Sir, Mr., is *messieurs*; of *madame*, Madam, Mrs., *mesdames*; of *mademoiselle*, Miss, *mesdemoiselles*; of *gentilhomme*, nobleman, *gentilshommes*.

N.B.—A gentleman is *un homme comme il faut*, *un homme bien élevé*.

165. In compound nouns, that part of the compound which is a noun or an adjective can alone take the sign of the plural, as *un chou-fleur*, a cauliflower, *des choux-fleurs*; *un coffre-fort*, a safe, *des coffres-forts*; *un tire-bouchon*, a corkscrew (from *tirer*, to draw), *des tire-bouchons*.

166. In compound nouns, made up of two nouns joined by a preposition, the first alone takes an *s*: *un chef-d'œuvre*, a masterpiece, *des chefs-d'œuvre*.

167. EXCEPTIONS.—The following, although containing nouns, are invariable: *des tête-à-tête*, private interviews; *des coq-à-l'âne*, cock and bull stories, nonsense; *des abat-jour*, shades.

grand' is always invariable in composition: *des grand'mères*, grandmothers.

Learn § 13 of the *Conversation*, and *vouloir*.

Model Exercise.

1. Venez avec moi, mesdames et mesdemoiselles. 2. Ces choux-fleurs sont excellents. 3. Cet artiste a fait des chefs-d'œuvre. 4. Les gentilshommes sont toujours des hommes comme il faut, mais un homme bien élevé n'est pas toujours un gentilhomme. 5. Nos grand-mères ont acheté des abat-jour pour les lampes. 6. Cet homme fabrique des coffres-forts.

Exercise 13.

1. These masterpieces have been bought by the State. 2. We have two grandsons; we are grandmothers. 3. They brought this morning fifty cauliflowers to (*the*) market. 4. His brothers are gentlemen. 5. These noblemen are in (*au*) the king's service.

Give the imperative and meaning of *devenir*, *revenir*, *convenir*, conjugated like *venir*.

Irregular verbs.—The imperative is formed from the indicative present (*see* Synopsis, § 129).

N.B.—A secondary tense may be formed *regularly* from an *irregular* primitive tense; thus, **tu viens**, the irregular second person singular of the indicative present from *venir*, forms *regularly* the imperative second person singular **viens**, come.

IDIOMS AND HINTS.

To ignore is not *ignorer*, but *négliger*, *ne pas faire attention à* :—

to be ignorant of

consequently

to enter a room

I write a letter

I am writing a letter

ignorer

{ *par conséquent*

{ *en conséquence*

entrer dans une chambre

j'écris une lettre

je suis en train d'écrire une lettre.

LESSON XIV.

ON THE ARTICLE.

168. **Some** or **any**: exceptions to rule 8 in Synopsis; look upon *jeunes gens*, *jeunes filles*, and *petits pois* as three substantives, taking no notice of the adjective, and say: *il y avait là des jeunes gens et des jeunes filles*, there were young men and women there; *donnez-moi des petits pois*, give me some green peas.

169. Rule 8 in the Synopsis, on the subject of the negative, is followed only when the negative is really implied: *il n'a pas d'amis*, he is friendless. *N'avez-vous pas des amis?* have you not friends? means, you know you have friends.

Learn § 14 of the *Conversation*, and *voir*.

Model Exercise.

1. Allons, courage! N'avez-vous pas des amis prêts à vous rendre service? 2. Ils sont malheureux, ceux qui n'ont pas d'amis! 3. Veuillez me donner des petits pois. 4. If y a des jeunes gens, il y a même beaucoup de jeunes gens qui ne travaillent pas assez. 5. Sache vaincre tes passions. 6. Ouvre ton cœur aux bons sentiments.

Exercise 14.

1. Know, that I am your senior! 2. Be kind enough to [*drop*] shut this door on account of the draught. 3. Gather this flower with care. 4. Work! have you not hands like the

others? 5. There were many young men and young women at the concert. 6. This poor man has no hands.

Write out the whole of the imperative of *ouvrir*, *offrir*, *cueillir*.

Irregular verbs.—The following are the only imperatives irregularly formed: Infinitive, *avoir*, to have; IMPT., aie, ayons, ayez;—*être*, to be; sois, soyons, soyez;—*savoir*, to know; sache, sachons, sachez;—*vouloir*, to wish; veuille, veuillons, veuillez (there is also a regular form). The verbs *cueillir*, to gather; *ouvrir*, to open; *offrir*, to offer, and the verbs conjugated like them (see the alphabetical list of verbs) have no *s* in the second person singular of the imperative: cueille, ouvre, offre. *N.B.*—‘*veuillez*’ means be so kind as to.

IDIOMS.

I have just	<i>je viens de</i>
I have just dined	<i>je viens de dîner</i> (not <i>j'ai justement</i>)
what did you give for it?	<i>combien l'avez-vous payé?</i>
it is an improvement	<i>c'est une amélioration</i>
	<i>cela fait mieux</i>
it will be a change for him	<i>c'est un progrès</i>
	<i>cela le changera.</i>

LESSON XV.

QUALIFYING ADJECTIVES.

170. Adjectives agree in gender and number with the noun they qualify: *ces villes sont grandes*, these towns are large.

171. An adjective qualifying two or more nouns of the same gender is put in the plural, and takes the gender of the nouns: *la mère et la fille sont heureuses*, the mother and the daughter are happy.

172. If the nouns are of **different genders** the adjective is put in the masculine plural: *le père et la mère sont inquiets*, the father and mother are uneasy.

173. Adjectives used adverbially are invariable: *ces fleurs sentent bon*, these flowers smell sweet (sweetly).

For *vous* and an adjective see Synopsis § 63, and for *gens* and an adjective see pp. 63—66.

Learn § 15 of the *Conversation*, and *écrire*.

Model Exercise.

1. Nous irons à Rome et nous y verrons des monuments magnifiques. 2. Quand saurez-vous si vous êtes reçu (*if you have passed*)? 3. Je saurai cela demain. 4. Ma cousine et ma sœur sont heureuses quand elles sont ensemble. 5. Un homme et une femme inconnus sont arrivés hier. 6. Ne cueillez pas ces fleurs, elles sentent mauvais.

Exercise 15.

1. Charles and his sister are not invited. 2. His mother and his aunt are gone to Geneva. 3. These horses trot very fast. 4. Those horses are very slow. 5. You will make me a coat and a waistcoat 6. They would make a boat 7. Will you know your lesson at two o'clock (*heures*)? 8. "Who will live (*vivra*) will see" is a French saying. (*Put the adjective after the noun.*)

Irregular verbs.—The future and the conditional are formed from the infinitive (see § 126); many verbs form their future, and, consequently, their conditional, irregularly.

N.B.—The conditional invariably follows the future, and when the latter is irregular, the conditional is irregular in the same manner; *e.g.*, *je verrai, je verrais*.

INFINITIVE, *vouloir*, to wish; *je voudrais*;—*voir*, to see; *je verrai*; *venir*, to come; *je viendrai*;—*savoir*, to know; *je saurai*;—*aller*, to go; *j'irai*;—*faire*, to make; *je ferai*;—*courir*, to run; *je courrai*.

IDIOMS AND HINTS.

Translate 'shall,' 'will,' 'should,' 'would,' 'may,' 'might,' by the future, conditional, or subjunctive of the French verb, if the English 'shall,' 'will,' etc., are simply auxiliary verbs; but if they express **will, duty, leave or power** use the French *vouloir, devoir, pouvoir*, *e.g.* :—

he will go to-morrow	<i>il partira demain</i>
he will go to-morrow	<i>il veut partir demain.</i>

LESSON XVI.

QUALIFYING ADJECTIVES.—(Continued.)

174. Place the French adjective after its substantive, as a rule.

175. Adjectives denoting **nationality, colour, and past participles**, used as adjectives, always come after the noun; *un cheval anglais* (see § 136), an English horse; *une robe blanche*, a white dress; *un homme instruit*, a learned man.

176. The following adjectives usually come before the noun: **beau, bon, cher, digne, — grand, jeune, joli, — mauvais, meilleur, moindre, — petit, saint, tel, tout, — vieux, vilain**; which mean :—fine, good, dear (denoting affection), worthy, — great, young, pretty, — bad, better, less, — little, holy, such, all, — old, ugly.

Learn § 16 of the *Conversation*, and *lire*.

Model Exercise.

1. Les domestiques français sont plus vifs que les domestiques anglais. 2. Je n'aime pas votre cravate rouge; mettez une cravate noire. 3. Un enfant mal élevé est très gênant. 4. Ma chère sœur, en lisant ta lettre j'ai beaucoup ri. 5. En voyant cela j'ai pensé qu'il avait mauvaise tête mais bon cœur. 6. Sachant que tu dînais avec nous, j'ai apporté des fruits excellents.

Exercise 16.

1. This is a French painting, and that is a Dutch engraving. 2. He and his sister are spoilt children. 3. My dear friends, do not forsake me in my distress. 4. Knowing that you like fruit (*use the article*), I have brought you some magnificent peaches. 5. On (*en*) reading the news of his death in the newspaper she fainted. 6. A piece of red cloth exasperates a bull.

Give the present participle of *to do*, *to drink*, *to see* and *to say*.

Irregular verbs.—The present participle is a primitive tense; it forms, 1°. the plural of the present indicative; 2°. the whole of the imperfect indicative; 3°. the whole of the present subjunctive (*see Synopsis*, § 127); there are many verbs irregular in the present participle.

INFINITIVE, *savoir*, to know; *ppr.*, sachant;—*prendre*, to take; prenant;—*lire*, to read; lisant;—*voir*, to see; voyant;—*dire*, to say; disant; *faire*, to do; faisant;—*boire*, to drink; buvant.

IDIOMS AND HINTS.

If you have in English *ought to* (*should*, or *could*) *have*, and a participle, use in French the **conditional of avoir**, *dû*, (*voulu*, or *pu*), and an infinitive: ● ●

he ought to (*or should*) have come *il aurait dû venir*

he could have come *il aurait pu venir.*

'Would' is generally translated by the conditional;
he would have come *il serait venu.*

LESSON XVII.

DEGREES OF COMPARISON.

(See Synopsis 36 to 45.)

177. More than, less than : If more and less are followed by an adjective, or a word used as such, they are *part of a comparative*, and “than” must be translated by **que** (see §§ 36 to 37) : *il est plus aimable que son frère*, he is more amiable than his brother.

If ‘more’ and ‘less,’ though not followed by an adjective, *establish a comparison* between two persons or things, or two sets of persons or things, *than* is again translated by **que**, because there are *two terms of comparison* : he has more money than you, *il a plus d'argent que vous*.

178. If there are not two terms of comparison, ‘more’ and ‘less’ are *adverbs of quantity*, and must be followed by **de** (see § 91) : he has more than a thousand volumes, *il a plus de mille volumes*.

REMARK, and imitate in similar cases : *cette salle a plus de cinq pieds de large*, this hall is more than five feet broad ; *cette salle a plus de cinq pieds de plus que l'autre*, this hall is more than five feet bigger than the other.

179. Do not translate ‘the’ in expressions like : **the more...the more** ; the less...the less ; the less...the more, etc. ; the more I look at it and the more I like it, *plus je le regarde et plus je l'aime*.

Learn § 17 of the *Conversation*, and *prendre*.

Model Exercise.

1. Ils savent que plus ils travailleront et plus ils feront de progrès. 2. Nous savons que Charles a remporté plus de prix que votre ami. 3. Nous avons moins de cinq livres dans notre bourse. 4. Ne savez-vous pas que vous êtes plus grand que votre cousin et plus petit que votre frère? 5. Ma règle a plus de deux pouces de plus que la vôtre.

Exercise 17.

1. Is he taller than me? 2. This table is more than four feet long. 3. The more you stroke it the more it grows. 4. This fisherman has taken more fish than the other. 5. He has more than two thousand stamps in his collection. 6. He has more than two hundred stamps more than his brother. 7. They have, they know, they are. 8. We have, you are, you know.

Irregular verbs.—The plural of the present indicative is formed from the present participle (*see* § 127). The following, and those conjugated like them, which are to be found in the Alphabetical List, are the only verbs which form the plural of the present indicative irregularly in the three persons.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE, *sachant*, plural of present indicative: Nous savons, vous savez, ils savent;—*ayant*, nous avons, vous avez, ils ont;—*étant*, nous sommes, vous êtes, ils sont.

IDIOMS AND HINTS.

In answering do not use the auxiliary alone:—

have you dined? yes, I have	<i>avez-vous dîné? oui, j'ai dîné</i>
did he take it? he did	<i>l'a-t-il pris? oui, il l'a pris</i>
has he taken it? I think he	<i>l'a-t-il pris? je crois qu'il l'a</i>
has	<i>pris, or je crois que oui.</i>

LESSON XVIII.

NUMERALS.

(See Synopsis 49 to 57.)

180. Mille, a thousand, is invariable ; *mille*, a mile, is a noun, and can take the sign of the plural.

181. Use the cardinal number in quoting pages, paragraphs, &c. : *page cinq*, page 5.

182. This room is twenty feet long (and similar expressions) can be translated in three ways : 1. *Cette chambre a vingt pieds de long* ; 2. *Cette chambre a vingt pieds de longueur* ; 3. *Cette chambre est longue de vingt pieds*. The same for 'broad' ; *large, largeur* ; high, *haut, hauteur* ; deep, *profond, profondeur* (except 'de profond,' which cannot be used).

183. Both, is : *les deux, tous deux, tous les deux, l'un et l'autre* ; both of you, *vous deux* ; both of them, *eux deux* ; the pronoun comes before *deux*.

184. Onze and onzième, 11, 11th, must be treated as if they began with an *h* aspirated, like *huit, huitième*, say *le onze, le onzième*.

Learn § 18 of the *Conversation*, and *boire*.

Model Exercise.

1. *Ils veulent deux mille francs, mais ils feront (they will walk) bien des milles avant de les trouver.* 2. '*Où en sommes-nous ?*' signifies 'how far have we got ?' 3. *Nous en sommes*

à la page trente, section douze. 4. Ils ne peuvent pas nous dire la largeur de cette chambre. 5. Elle est large de dix pieds, elle a dix pieds de hauteur, et elle a dix pieds de long. 6. Le onze du mois prochain nous irons tous les deux à Paris, et nous reviendrons le huit septembre.

Exercise 18.

1. This ground is a hundred and thirty feet wide, and a hundred and forty-two feet long. 2. On (*drop*) the eleventh of this month I shall be (*have*) twenty years old (*drop*). 3. He has walked (*made*) two thousand miles and earned twenty thousand francs. 4. How far have we got in this book? 5. We have got to chapter ten and page one hundred and three. 6. They wish, they move, they can, they die.

Irregular verbs.—The plural of the present indicative (*continued*): The following verbs, and those conjugated like them, form irregularly one or two persons only out of the three in the plural indicative.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE, *faisant*, making,—plural of present indicative: Vous **faites**, ils **font** ;—*disant*, saying; vous **dites** ;—*pouvant*, being able, ils peuvent ;—*mouvant*, moving, ils meurent ;—*mourant*, dying, ils meurent ;—*voulant*, wishing, ils veulent.

IDIOMS AND HINTS.

Remark that in the answers the principal word of the question is recalled by *le, la, les, en, y*, etc. :—

have you my grammar? yes,	<i>avez-vous ma grammaire?</i>
I have	<i>oui, je l'ai</i>
is that your son? it is	<i>est-ce votre fils? c'est lui</i>
is it water? it is	<i>est-ce de l'eau? c'en est</i>
does he live here? he does	<i>demeure-t-il ici? il y demeure.</i>

LESSON XIX.

POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

(See Synopsis 46 to 48.)

185. Do not use the possessive in 'my head aches,' and similar expressions: *j'ai mal à la tête*; your hands are cold, **vous** *avez froid aux mains*; she has broken her arm, *elle s'est cassé le bras*; you are stepping on my foot, *vous me marchez sur le pied*; the hair-cutter has cut our hair, *le coiffeur nous a coupé les cheveux*.

In all the above sentences the pronouns **j', vous** (nominatives) **s', me, nous** (datives) show plainly who is the possessor.

N.B.—Remember that the possessive adjective must be repeated in French before every noun: 'Give me my coat and waistcoat,' *donnez-moi mon habit et mon gilet*.

Learn § 19 of the *Conversation*, and *croire*.

Model Exercise.

1. Ils voient que leur mère a mal à la tête et ils font du bruit. 2. Ils vont voir cette pauvre femme qui s'est cassé la jambe. 3. 'Il n'aime pas qu'on lui marche sur le pied' signifie au figuré (*figuratively*), il s'offense facilement. 4. Ils prennent ma bourse, mon foulard et mes lunettes. 5. Il n'est jamais content; tantôt il a froid aux pieds, tantôt il a trop chaud à la tête.

Exercise 19.

1. They milk the cow. 2. They take my books, my pens, my paper, and my stamps.

8. He broke his collar-bone. 4. He is changed; he has had his beard cut. 5. I am very tired; my back aches. 6. His hands are always cold.

Give the third person plural of the present indicative of *to go, to hold, to provide, to acquire, to believe*.

Irregular verbs.—The plural of the present indicative (*continued*): The following verbs, and those conjugated like them, form irregularly the third person plural of the present indicative:—*Voyant*, seeing, ils voient;—*pourvoyant*, providing, ils pourvoient;—*trayant*, milking, ils traient;—*croyant*, believing, ils croient;—*prenant*, taking, ils prennent;—*tenant*, holding, ils tiennent; *venant*, coming, ils viennent;—*buvant*, drinking, ils boivent;—*devant*, owing, ils doivent;—*acquérant*, acquiring, ils acquièrent;—*allant*, going, ils vont.

IDIOMS.

I told you so, did I not?	<i>je vous l'ai dit, n'est-ce pas?</i>
this lady sings well.—Does she?	<i>cette dame chante bien.—Vraiment? or en vérité?</i>
I am going to Paris.—Are you?	<i>je vais à Paris.—Ah! vraiment?</i>

LESSON XX.

ADJECTIVES.

(See Synopsis 103.)

186. **Tout**, meaning 'quite,' however, is an adverb, and therefore invariable: *elles furent tout étonnées*, they were quite astonished.

187. **Tout**, adverb, takes gender and number, for the sake of euphony, before an adjective or a past participle in the feminine, beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirate; *elles sont toutes changées*, they are quite changed; *toutes spirituelles qu'elles sont*, however witty they are.

188. Quelque, meaning "whatever, nearly, about, however," is invariable : **quelque puissants qu'ils soient**, however powerful they may be ; **quelque dix mille hommes**, about 10,000 men.

Learn § 20 of the *Conversation*, and *donner*.

Model Exercise.

1. Elles ont été toutes surprises de me voir, elles ne savaient pas que je viendrais. 2. Il paraît qu'ils ont été tout étonnés de l'entendre parler ainsi. 3. Quelque fin qu'il soit il n'est pas assez fin pour vous tromper. 4. Elle a marché vite, elle est tout essoufflée. 5. Nous savions que vous seriez en retard (*late*).

Exercise 20.

1. They were quite astonished at (*de*) his audacity. 2. However brave you may be, you are not braver than Charles. 3. We did not know that you were here. 4. About two hundred persons were wounded in that accident. 5. My mother and sister were quite surprised at (*de*) seeing (*infinitive*) you. 6. Knowing that I knew (*imperfect*) that, he avoided me.

Irregular verbs.—The imperfect indicative is formed from the present participle (§ 127). The following verbs are the only ones which form their imperfect indicative irregularly:—

PRESENT PARTICIPLE, *sachant*, knowing, imperfect indicative, je savais ;—*ayant*, having, j'avais.

IDIOMS.

thank you for the book you sent me	<i>merci du livre que vous m'avez envoyé</i>
don't mention it	<i>il n'y a pas de quoi</i>
one or two too many	<i>un ou deux de trop</i>
an illustrated book	<i>un livre illustré</i>
an illustrious man	<i>un homme illustre.</i>

LESSON XXI.

INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES.—(Continued.)

189. In *quelques efforts que vous fassiez*, whatever efforts you may make, **quelque** is variable, and separated from the verb by a noun.

190. In *quelles que soient vos intentions*, whatever your intentions may be, **quelles** is the variable part, and there is no noun between it and the verb; besides that, "**quel que**" can only be followed by the verb *être*.

191. Both *quelque...que* and *quel que* require the subjunctive, as the examples show.

192. **Même**, meaning 'even,' is invariable; *les femmes et les enfants même*, women and even children.

193. **Chaque** is an adjective, and must be joined to a noun; *chaque âge a ses plaisirs*, each age has its pleasures.

194. **Chacun** is a pronoun and must be used instead of a noun; *à chacun sa part*, let each have his share.

Learn § 21 of the *Conversation*, and *pouvoir*.

Model Exercise.

1. Il faut que chaque élève fasse son thème et sa version tout seul; "chacun pour soi" n'est pas toujours une mauvaise maxime. 2. Quelques services que nous lui rendions il ne sera jamais reconnaissant. 3. Il faut que tout le

monde (*everybody*) puisse vous comprendre, même les enfants. 4. Quelle que soit sa faute, il est jeune, il faut être indulgent. 5. Chacun d'eux s'arrêtait à chaque pas

Exercise 21.

1. "Each one to [*drop*] his taste" is a French saying, which they never quote properly.
2. Each thing has its place here. 3. Whatever your faults may be, you are straightforward.
4. Everything is useful, even old rags.
5. Whatever talents you may have, be modest.
6. That they may be able; that you may make.

Irregular verbs.—The present subjunctive is formed from the present participle (§ 127). The three following verbs are the only ones which form their present subjunctive irregularly in every person singular and plural:—

PRESENT PARTICIPLE, *faisant*, present subjunctive: que je fasse, que tu fasses, qu'il fasse, que nous fassions, que vous fassiez, qu'ils fassent;—*étant*, que je sois, etc.;—*pouvant*, being able, que je puisse, que tu puisses, qu'il puisse, que nous puissions, que vous puissiez, qu'ils puissent.

light the lamp
light me downstairs
bring a light
an old pupil
(one formerly a pupil)
an old pupil
(one advanced in years).

allumez la lampe
éclairez-moi (sur l'escalier)
apportez de la lumière
un **ancien** élève

un *vieil* élève.

LESSON XXII.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

(See Synopsis §§ 58 to 66.)

195. The table given below shows in what order governed pronouns must come when more than one precedes the verb.

me, te, se, nous, vous	before all others
le, la, les	before <i>lui, leur, y, en</i>
lui, leur	before <i>y, en</i>
y	before <i>en</i>
en	immediately before the verb.

Example : *Je le leur y porterai*, I shall take it to them there.

196. Governed pronouns after the verb (see § 61) ; *me, te*, after the verb, become **moi, toi**, and before *en* **m' t'**.

	these come first	these come next
donnez {	le	moi
		nous
	les	lui
		leur
donnez {	m'	} en
	lui	
	nous	
	leur	

197. For **en** and **y** see *parles-en, portes-y, vas-y*, (§ 159) ; remark also *promènes-y-toi, promenez-vous-y* (from *se promener*), take a walk there, **oi**, take me there.

Except in cases similar to the above, avoid y after the verb.

Learn § 22 of the *Conversation*, and *mourir*.

Model Exercise.

1. Vous ne l'aimez pas, mais il est inutile de le lui dire. 2. Jean, nous allons dans le jardin, vous nous y apporterez le thé. 3. Je n'ai pas été à Paris, il faut que j'y aille. 4. Vas-y la semaine prochaine, et quand tu y seras parles-y toujours français. 5. Monsieur et Madame sont dans le jardin; voici le thé, il faut que vous alliez le leur y porter. 6. Allez-y vous-même et promenez-vous-y.

Exercise 22.

1. Here is a ticket for the theatre, go (*singular*) there, and come back and [*drop*] tell me what (*ce que*) you have seen. 2. I am going there, and shall stay there until the end. 3. Give it to me, do not give it to them. 4. Take (*singular*) this, go into the drawing-room, your sisters are there, and you will give it to them. 5. I had some stamps, and I have given her some for her collection. 6. They met us there. 7. That I may go, that you may go, that we may go.

Irregular verbs.—The present subjunctive (*continued*). The following verbs, and those conjugated like them, form all the persons of the present subjunctive irregularly, except the first and second persons plural, which are regularly formed from the present participle, *e.g.*, *allant*, *que nous allions*, *que vous alliez*, are regularly formed :

PRESENT PARTICIPLE, *allant*,——, the present subjunctive, (minus the first and second persons plural):—*Que j'aille*, *que tu ailles*, *qu'il aille*, *qu'ils aillent*.

IDIOMS.

it is fine (bad, muddy, or dirty) weather	<i>il fait beau (vilain, crotté)</i>
to frighten	<i>faire peur à</i>
to hurt (physically)	<i>faire mal à</i>
to wrong	<i>faire tort à.</i>

LESSON XXIII.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.—(Continued.)

198. Put the pronoun subject after the verb (§§ 59, 60, 61) when announcing that another person's words are quoted, as in English : follow me, said he to me, *suis-moi, me dit-il*. The same would take place with any subject : *je lui pardonne, dit mon père*, I forgive him, said my father.

199. After "à peine," hardly, "aussi," accordingly, "peut-être," perhaps, and a few other similar expressions, put the pronoun subject after the verb ; *peut-être viendra-t-il ce soir*, he will perhaps come this evening ; this is considered more elegant, but is not obligatory ; *il viendra peut-être ce soir*, is quite correct.

Learn § 23 of the *Conversation*, and *connaître*.

Model Exercise.

1. *Frappe, dit-il, mais écoute.* 2. *Soldats, cria le capitaine en brandissant son épée, en avant !* 3. *Je ne fais pas de progrès. Peut-être ne travaillez-vous pas avec assez d'ardeur.* 4. *Il faut que tu tiennes mieux ta plume, pour que l'encre vienne au bout du bec.* 5. *A peine eut-il reçu la lettre, qu'il m'appela et me la donna à lire.*

Exercise 23.

1. Hardly had he read the first page of the book than he threw it aside. 2. Perhaps he will not like it. 3. Come! (*allons*) said he, do not

despair. 4. I say! (*dis donc!*) he shouted, stop him! 5. You must hold (*subj. pr.*) this horse for me until I come (*subj. pr.*) back. 6. That he may hold; that we may come.

Irregular verbs.—The present subjunctive (*continued*). The two persons not given are regularly formed (§ 127): *p. pr.*, *valant*, being worth; *SUBJ. pr.*, *que je vaille*, *que tu vailles*, *qu'il vaille*, *qu'ils valent*;—*tenant*, holding; *que je tienne*, *que tu tiennes*, *qu'il tienne*, *qu'ils tiennent*;—*venant*, coming; *que je vienne*, *que tu viennes*, *qu'il vienne*, *qu'ils viennent*.

IDOMS.

Faire is used to express 'to have,' 'to get' a thing done 'to order' a thing to be done:

have this book bound	<i>faites relier ce livre</i>
get this lock mended	<i>faites raccommoder cette serrure</i>
to order, to get done for oneself	<i>se faire faire</i>
I have ordered a new coat	<i>je me suis fait faire un habit neuf.</i>

LESSON XXIV.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.—(*Continued.*)

*200. In *êtes-vous la directrice de cet établissement?* *je la suis*, are you the manageress of this establishment? I am; and in *êtes-vous la malade?* *je la suis*, are you the patient? I am; *la* agrees because it has a noun, or an adjective used as a noun with which to agree: **la directrice, la malade.**

201. In *êtes-vous malade?* *je le suis*, are you ill? I am; and in *êtes-vous directrice de cet établissement?* *je le suis*, are you manageress in this establishment? I am; **le** remains invariable because it has no noun with which to agree;

malade is an adjective, **directrice** is a noun used as an adjective. The presence or absence of the article will show whether the word is used as a noun or as an adjective.

202. **En** and **y** are used instead of *de lui*, *d'elle*, etc., *à lui*, *à elle*, etc. in speaking of animals and things; he caught the fever and died of it, *il a attrapé la fièvre et il en est mort*, take this letter and add a few lines to it, *prenez cette lettre et ajoutez-y quelques lignes*.

In speaking of persons you may often use either *de lui*, etc., *à lui*, etc., or *en* and *y*.

Il aime sa sœur, il en parle souvent or *il parle souvent d'elle*; **y** for a person is less common.

For the place of *en* and *y*, see preceding lesson.

Learn § 24 of the *Conversation*, and *savoir*.

Model Exercise.

1. Vous êtes pâle, mademoiselle; êtes-vous malade? Je le suis. 2. Vous avez oublié mes commissions. Je n'en ai oublié qu'une partie. 3. Veillez à cela. J'y veillerai. 4. Le docteur, qui est myope, a dit à ma sœur, qui se porte bien: "Mademoiselle, êtes-vous la malade;" elle a répondu: "Non, docteur, je ne la suis pas." 5. N'écrivez pas "qu'il croie" avec un y, faites-y attention. 6. Il est fier de ses ancêtres, il en parle sans cesse.

Exercise 24.

1. This pupil is very attentive, his master is pleased with him (*en*). 2. Here is the letter, I have added a post-script to it. 3. Are you the

authors of this book? We are. 4. Are they authors? They are. 5. I like science, I devote myself to it. 6. That I may believe; that they may believe; that you may believe.

Irregular verbs.—The present subjunctive (*continued*). The two persons not given are regularly formed (§ 127):

PRESENT PARTICIPLE, *croyant*, believing, present subjunctive (minus the first and second persons plural): que je croie, que tu croies, qu'il croie, qu'ils croient; the irregularity is simply the change of **y** into **i** before a mute **e**; the first and second persons plural are: que nous croyions, que vous croyiez, because there is no **e** mute after the **y**.

IDIOMS.

he sends kind messages to you	<i>il vous fait dire bien des choses aimables</i>
cricket is a fine game	<i>le jeu de cricket est un beau jeu</i>
come and have a game at cricket	<i>viens faire une partie de cricket</i>
we have had a good game	<i>nous avons fait une bonne partie.</i>

LESSON XXV.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

203. Do not mistake the possessive adjectives for the possessive pronouns (§ 75). Be careful to pronounce the **o** in *votre* and *notre*, the adjectives, **short**, and the **ô** in *le nôtre*, *le vôtre*, the pronouns, **long**.

204. After *être*, the pronouns mine, thine, his, hers, ours, yours, theirs, are usually *à moi*, *à toi*, *à lui*, *à elle*, *à nous*, *à vous*, *à eux*, **or** *à elles*: this knife is mine, *ce couteau est à moi*.

205. *Les miens*, etc., *les tiens*, etc., used as nouns, mean "my, thy, his, her, family, relations, set, etc." *Les siens l'ont abandonné*, his people

have given him up ; *voulez-vous être des nôtres ?*
will you join us (be of our party) ?

206. A friend of mine, of his, etc., is translated
by *un de mes amis*, *un de ses amis*, etc.

Learn § 25 of the *Conversation*, and *mettre*.

Model Exercise.

1. Voici mon canif ; celui-ci est le vôtre
celui-là est le sien ; nous avons maintenant
chacun notre canif. 2. Vous vous trompez,
voici le mien ; voilà votre canif ; son canif, à
lui (*emphatic*), n'est pas ici. 3. Ce qui est à moi
est à vous. 4. Nous allons faire une partie
(*not jeu*) de cricket ; voulez-vous être des
nôtres ? 5. Je vois là-bas deux de mes amis
qui viennent. 6. Avez-vous bien compris le
changement de l' *y* en *i* dans "envoyant" "que
j'envoie" ?

Exercise 25.

1. Here is your ruler, this one is ours. 2. Do
not forget that what (*ce qui*) is mine is not
yours, but that I will lend you what (*ce que*) I
possess with pleasure. 3. One of my pupils
has taken (*remporter*) all the prizes in (*de*) his
class. 4. We are going on the river, join us.
5. Let us have (*faisons*) a game of chess to-
gether. 6. I must see (*subj. pr.*) it. 7. I desire
that you should see (*subj. pr.*) it also.

Irregular verbs.—The present subjunctive (*continued*).
The irregularity in the following verbs consists in the change
of *y* into *i* before an *e* mute : *p.p.r.*, *envoyant*, sending ;
SUBJ. *pr.*, que j'envoie, que tu envoies, qu'il envoie, qu'ils
envoient—*trayant*, milking ; que je traie, que tu traies, qu'il
traie, qu'ils traient ; *voyant*, seeing ; que je voie, que tu
voies, qu'il voie, qu'ils voient ;—*pourvoyant*, providing ; que
je pourvoie, etc.

at any cost	}	<i>coûte que coûte</i>
cost what it may		
everyone to his taste		<i>chacun son goût</i> (not <i>a</i> nor <i>à</i>)
never mind		<i>n'importe</i>
to return (to come back)		<i>revenir</i>
to return (to go back)		<i>retourner</i>
to return a thing, book, etc.		<i>rendre une chose, un livre</i>
I mean		<i>je veux dire.</i>

LESSON XXVI.

**DEMONSTRATIVE AND INDEFINITE
PRONOUNS.**

(See Synopsis, §§ 85, 86 and 104.)

207. "Take **what** remains" and "take **what** I give you," would be in French: *prenez ce qui reste*, and *prenez ce que je vous donne*. Mark the two French words *ce qui*, *ce que*, to express the one English word "what;" we must in French say "that which," taking care to put the relative in the proper case, *qui* for the nominative, *que* for the accusative.

208. **Indefinite pronouns.** *On* is very often used with a verb in the active instead of the English passive. "A telegram has been received," *on a reçu un télégramme*; "they have been seen," *on les a vus*.

209. **L'un l'autre** means one another, each other, and expresses reciprocity, *aimez-vous les uns les autres*, love one another, *ni l'un ni l'autre*, means neither the one nor the other.

210. **L'un et l'autre** means both, and does not express reciprocity; *l'un et l'autre sont ici*, both are here. (For *both*, see § 183.)

Learn § 26 of the *Conversation*, and *naitre*.

Model Exercise.

1. Je vous montrerai ce qui m'a été donné hier, et ce que j'ai l'intention de donner à mon ami. 2. Voici deux médecines, il faut qu'il prenne l'une et l'autre. 3. Ces deux hommes se flattent l'un l'autre. 4. Quant à moi (*as for me*) je n'estime ni l'un ni l'autre. 5. Il ne faut pas qu'ils meurent ! 6. On a réparé le clocher de l'église.

Exercise 26.

1. The town has been very much enlarged and improved. 2. Must I take both ? 3. No, you must take neither the one nor the other. 4. Help (use *s'aider*) one another. 5. Do you know what he says ? 6. No, I do not know what he says. 7. Tell me what you will do to-morrow. 8. I cannot tell you what I will do. 9. That we may wish ; that they may wish.

Irregular verbs.—The present subjunctive (*continued*). The two persons not given are regularly formed.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE, *mourant*, dying ; present subjunctive (minus the first and second person plural): que je meure, que tu meures, qu'il meure, qu'ils meurent ;—*mouvant*, moving ; que je meuve, que tu meuves, qu'il meuve, qu'ils meuvent ;—*voulant*, wishing ; que je veuille, que tu veuilles, qu'il veuille, qu'ils veuillent.

to lay the cloth

to take the things away	{ <i>desservir</i> <i>ôter le couvert</i> <i>ôter la nappe</i> .
-------------------------	--

LESSON XXVII.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.—(Continued.)

211. Personne, meaning nobody, is masculine: *personne n'est venu*, nobody came; but the noun *une personne*, a person, somebody, is feminine.

212. Quelque chose is masculine, although *la chose* is feminine; *quelque chose de beau*, something fine.

213. Rien is masculine. In sentences like *y a-t-il rien de plus beau?* is there anything finer? *rien* has the original meaning of 'something' (*Lat. res, rem*, thing).

214. REMARK that in the above sentences **de** must be used after *quelque chose* and *rien*, before an adjective.

Learn § 27 of the *Conversation*, and *s'asseoir*.

Model Exercise.

1. Il n'y a rien de plus beau que la vérité.
2. Si tu es sage, je t'apporterai quelque chose de bon.
3. Il n'y a rien de meilleur que cela.
4. Personne n'est meilleur ni plus charmant que lui.
5. Est-ce que cette jolie personne est de votre famille?
6. Y a-t-il rien de plus gracieux que cette fleur?

Exercise 27.

1. That person (use the relative) you see there is very learned.
2. Nobody is better informed.

3. There is nothing more imposing than a fine sunset (*coucher de soleil*). 4. You can give me something prettier than that for my money. 5. I have nothing prettier, and nothing better than that.

Give the first and third persons plural present subjunctive of: *acquérant*, *buvant*, *devant*, *prenant*.

Irregular verbs.—The present subjunctive (*continued*).
p. pr., *buvant*, drinking; *SUBJ. pr.*, que je boive, que tu boives, qu'il boive, qu'ils boivent;—*devant*, owing; que je doive, que tu doives, qu'il doive, qu'ils doivent;—*acquérant*, acquiring; que j'acquière, que tu acquières, qu'il acquière, qu'ils acquièrent;—*prenant*, taking; que je prenne, que tu prennes, qu'il prenne, qu'ils prennent.

don't expect me to-morrow	<i>ne comptez pas sur moi de main</i>
we expect you	<i>nous comptons sur vous</i>
he is so particular	<i>il est si difficile (particulier</i> would mean 'strange,' 'odd').
this cake is too rich	<i>ce gâteau est trop lourd (not</i> <i>riche).</i>

LESSON XXVIII.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

(See Synopsis, §§ 76 to 82.)

215. Qui is of the same gender, number, and person, as its antecedent: *la fille qui est attentive*, the girl who is attentive; *c'est vous qui l'avez pris*, it is you who took it. The antecedent being *vous*, the verb after *qui* is put in the second person plural.

216. Do not forget that "**qui**" is **nominative**, and that "**que**" is **accusative**.

N.B.—*qui* can only be accusative as an interrogative pronoun : Whom do you love? **qui aimez-vous ?**

217. Dont (§ 81) cannot be used as an interrogative pronoun : of whom do you speak? **de qui parlez-vous ?**—of what do you speak? **de quoi parlez-vous ?**

Beware of mistaking **que**, “that,” the conjunction, and **que**, the relative, and see *Synopsis*, § 80.

Learn § 28 of the *Conversation*, and *tenir*.

Model Exercise.

1. Toi, qui étais là, raconte-moi ce qui est arrivé. 2. Je fus frappé, étourdi, et je ne vis rien; lui, qui y était aussi, vous le dira. 3. L'homme que nous vîmes hier a parlé à la domestique qui lui a dit que nous étions sortis. 4. Le livre dont vous parlez est excellent, mais l'édition en est épuisée (*out of print*). 5. De qui avez-vous reçu une lettre? 6. De quoi s'agit-il? (*what's the matter?*). 7. De qui est-il le fils?

Exercise 28.

1. To whom are you speaking? 2. Whose daughter is she? 3. Is this the wonderful invention of which you are so proud? 4. Here is the person who told me that you knew (*connaître*) him. 5. This is the kind of book I like. 6. This is the friend whose photograph I showed you (*of whom I showed you the photograph*). 7. They knew (*savoir*), we saw, they saw, we knew.

Irregular verbs.—The past definite is a primitive tense; it forms the imperfect subjunctive. Many verbs are irregular in the past definite.

INFINITIVE, *voir*, to see; *p.d.*, je vis, tu vis, il vit, nous vîmes, vous vîtes, ils virent;—*savoir*, to know; je sus, tu sus, il sut, nous sûmes, vous sûtes, ils surent.

how kind of you!	{ <i>comme c'est aimable de votre</i> <i>part</i>
to shake hands with	
I am thoroughly tired out	{ <i>que c'est aimable à vous</i> <i>donner une poignée de main à</i> <i>je n'en peux plus.</i>

"

LESSON XXIX.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.—(Continued.)

(See Synopsis, §§ 76 to 82.)

218. Dont cannot be the genitive of a noun governed by a preposition: *de qui*, *duquel*, must therefore be used in sentences like the following: *c'est un homme aux vertus duquel je rends justice*, he is a man to whose virtues I do justice.

219. N.B. When you have to use a relative, see if your French verb requires a preposition, and if it does, what preposition it requires.

If it requires *de* use **dont**: to want is *avoir besoin de*; "here is the book which you wanted," will be: *voici le livre dont vous aviez besoin*.

For "what," meaning "that which," see 207.

Learn § 29 of the *Conversation*, and *courir*.

Model Exercise.

1. La personne, à l'influence de laquelle je dois mon avancement, est celle dont je vous

parlais hier. 2. Est-ce le livre dont j'ai besoin (*avoir besoin de*)? 3. Non, c'est celui dont je me sers (*se servir de*). 4. Donnez-moi celui dont vous vous servez. 5. Donnez-nous ce dont nous avons besoin.

Exercise 29.

1. Give him what he wants (*avoir besoin de*).
 2. What does he want? 3. Is this watch the one of which you broke the spring? 4. Here is the lady to whose son you gave the lessons.
 5. The pen which I use is better than yours.
 6. We put the glasses on the table. 7. They lived very long (*longtemps*). 8. We were born (*past definite*) the same year (*année*) that they were born.

Irregular verbs. — The past definite (*continued*).
Mettre, to put; je mis, tu mis, il mit, nous mîmes, vous mîtes, ils mirent;—*venir*, to come; je vins, tu vins, il vint, nous vîmes, vous vîntes, ils vinrent;—*vivre*, to live; je vécus, tu vécus, il vécut, nous vécûmes, vous vécûtes, ils vécurent;—*naître*, to be born; je naquis, tu naquis, il naquit, nous naquîmes, vous naquîtes, ils naquirent.

I cannot help it
 to enjoy oneself
 did you enjoy yourself?
 did you enjoy your walk?

(je n'en peux mais
je n'y peux rien
s'amuser
vous êtes-vous amusé ?
avez-vous fait une bonne
promenade ?

LESSON XXX.

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

220. The interrogative pronouns are the same as the relative pronouns with the exception of *dont*, which is not used interrogatively.

221. *Qui?* who? is used for persons only, and is both nominative and accusative; *qui frappe?* who knocks? *qui a-t-il frappé?* whom did he strike?

222. *Que?* what? is used for things only; *que dit-il?* what does he say? It cannot be used after a preposition.

223. What? is *de quoi?* *à quoi?* when the verb requires a preposition in French; what are you thinking of? *à quoi pensez-vous* (*penser à*)? what do you want? *de quoi avez-vous besoin* (*avoir besoin de*)?

224. *Lequel?* (*m.*) *Laquelle?* (*f.*) which? is used when choice is possible; *voici deux plumes, laquelle voulez-vous?* here are two pens, which will you have?

225. *Quel?* (*m.*) *Quelle?* (*f.*) which? what? (§ 82) is an interrogative adjective, and must be followed by a noun; *quelle plume voulez-vous?* what pen will you have?

226. **What a!** is translated by *quel*, without any article; what a teaze you are! *quel taquin vous êtes*, or more idiomatically, *quel taquin vous faites!*

Learn § 30 of the *Conversation* and *craindre*.

Model Exercise.

1. Quel bon et digne homme ! 2. Pardon, que dites-vous ? je n'ai pas entendu. 3. De quoi avez-vous besoin ? 4. De qui vous plaignez-vous ? 5. Quelle version faites-vous dans ce moment-ci ? 6. Qui dois-je croire ? 7. Que dois-je faire ? 8. Lequel de vous deux me dira la vérité ?

• Exercise 30.

1. Here are two watches, which of the two do you like best ? 2. What has he given you ? 3. What language do you speak besides your own (*yours*) ? 4. What a noise ! 5. Of what were you dreaming (*rêver à*) ? 6. To what were you alluding (*faire allusion à*) ? 7. Who called ? 8. Whom did he call ?

Give the third persons singular and plural of every simple tense of : *venir, voir, prendre, savoir, pouvoir*.

Irregular verbs.—Imperfect subjunctive. This tense is formed from the past definitive (§ 130) ; every verb, without exception, forms this tense regularly ; a few verbs have no past definite, and consequently no imperfect subjunctive.

SECOND PART.

LESSON XXXI.

VERBS.

227. Pouvoir (see *Alphabetical List of Verbs*), in the indicative present, has two forms for the first person singular, *je peux* and *je puis*; the former is more emphatic than the latter; *puis* is used for asking a question; *puis-je?* can I? *peux-je?* is never used; say, *est-ce que je peux?*

228. Savoir: *je ne saurais* (no *pas*) means I cannot.

229. Verbs agree with their subject in number and person.

If there are pronouns of different persons as subjects, the verb is put in the first person plural with *nous* before it (if one of the pronouns is in the first person), or in the second person plural with *vous* before it (if there is no first person); *lui et moi nous sommes pauvres*, he and I are poor; *elle et toi vous êtes riches*, she and you are rich.

G

Learn § 31 of the *Conversation*, and the verbs conjugated like *venir*.

Model Exercise.

1. Puis-je vous aider? Merci. 2. Aidez-moi à faire mon thème grec. 3. Je ne saurais vous aider, j'ai presque oublié mon grec. 4. Nous ne pourrons (*pouvoir*) pas tous aller dans la voiture. 5. Si (*on account of the negative*), ta mère, ta sœur et toi vous serez à l'intérieur, Charles et moi nous monterons sur le siège. 6. Est-ce que je peux aller jouer? 7. Oui, va.

• Exercise 31.

1. The telephone, the phonograph, and the microphone are recent inventions. 2. Can I (use *puis*) come in (*entrer*)? 3. Can I (use *peux*) ask my school-fellow to lunch (*inviter à*). 4. I cannot (*savoir*) see that without shuddering (*infinitive*). 5. You and he understand one another. 6. You cannot do that. Yes, I can do it. 7. You and I can do it quicker than your brother. 8. I cannot (*savoir*) do it.

Give the future of *prévenir*, the pluperfect subjunctive of *parvenir* and *subvenir*, and the imperative of *se souvenir*.

Il faut often expresses the will or desire of the speaker :—
you must come and see me *il faut venir me voir.*

Devoir does not express the will of the speaker :—
you must be tired *vous devez être fatigué.*

LESSON XXXII.

• VERBS.—(Continued.)

230. **Ce sont** is used instead of *c'est*, it is, when a plural noun follows, or a pronoun in the third

person plural : *ce sont ses amis qui le disent*, it is his friends who say so ; *ce sont eux qui viennent*, it is they who are coming (read the Lesson on *ce* and *il*).

231. Falloir can be construed in three ways :

(1) **Il faut que je, que tu, qu'il or qu'elle, que nous, que vous, qu'ils or qu'elles** with the subjunctive : *il faut que je parte demain*, I must start to-morrow. This construction can always be used.

(2) **Il me, te, lui, nous, vous, leur faut**, with the infinitive : *il me faut partir demain*, I must start to-morrow. This construction is not generally used when the following verb has an object : *il faut que je lui dise cela*, I must tell him that.

(3) **Il faut**, with the infinitive and **no pronoun**. This is used when the person spoken to (or even some indefinite person or persons) is expected to do the action expressed by the infinitive : *il faut soigner ce rhume*, you must nurse that cold ; *il faudrait bâtir un plus grand nombre d'écoles*, they ought to build a greater number of schools.

Learn § 32 of the *Conversation*, and the verbs conjugated like *tenir*.

Model Exercise.

1. Il faut que nous partions par le train de dix heures. 2. Alors il vous faut partir d'ici à neuf heures et demie. 3. C'est vous qui avez prêté ces jouets à ces enfants. 4. Non, ce sont ces dames, il faut les remercier. 5. Il faudra que je le gronde. 6. Il ne faut pas le gronder trop fort.

e.g., wait *for* your friend, *attends ton ami*; I bought it *for* ten francs and sold it *for* fifteen, *je l'ai acheté dix francs et je l'ai vendu quinze*.

235. English verbs requiring 'off,' 'up,' 'upon,' 'away,' generally require no preposition in French: take this away, *emporte cela*.

N.B.—**Vouloir**, to wish to, before an infinitive, cannot have a preposition: I wish to see him, *or* I will see him, *je veux le voir*; **souhaiter** may take **de**, or none.

Learn § 33 of the *Conversation*, and the verbs like *faire*.

Model Exercise.

1. Nous avons été surpris (*overtaken*) par la pluie. 2. Les méchants sont craints de tout le monde. 3. Mais ils ne sont chéris de personne. 4. Nous voulons vous accompagner jusqu'à la voiture. 5. Vous avez acheté cela vingt francs, et vous ne le vendrez pas vingt sous. 6. Je souhaite de le voir réussir.

Exercise 33.

1. I bought that for six shillings, and I should like to [*drop*] sell it for three. 2. Those who love truth are hated by those who fear it. 3. They were driven out of the garden by the children who threw stones at them. 4. Wait for me; I am looking for my hat. 5. Take off (*ôter*) your overcoat which is wet, and the servant will take it away (*emporter*). 6. Where did you meet with him?

Give the third person plural of the ⁴present, past definite, future indicative, and of the present subjunctive of: *satisfaire*, *défaire*, and *refaire*.

LESSON XXXIV.

VERBS AND PREPOSITIONS.—(*Continued.*)

236. **With**, when it is the preposition governed by the English verb, is translated into French by **de**: to blush with shame, *rougir de honte*.

Except: to abound with (*or in*), *abonder en*; to compare with, *comparer à*; to meet with, *rencontrer* (no preposition).

237. **With**, meaning in the company of, together with, with the help of, etc., is **avec**: come with me, *venez avec moi*; put this with that. *mettez ceci avec cela*; break it with a hammer, *casse-le avec un marteau*.

Learn § 34 of the *Conversation*, and the verbs like *prendre*.

Model Exercise.

1. Qui est-ce qui veut venir avec moi? 2. Nous irons tous avec vous. 3. Ce comté abonde en fruits de toutes sortes. 4. Où l'avez-vous rencontré? 5. Je l'ai rencontré à Bruxelles (*x like ss*). 6. A qui compareriez-vous cet auteur?—A personne; il est unique en son genre.

Exercise 34.

1. Put this book with the other one on the first shelf of my library. 2. Compare the first edition with the second, and you will find a good many changes. 3. I feed my fowls with wheat. 4. This book abounds in

quotations. 5. We met with them one evening at a lecture. 6. They overwhelmed us with compliments.

Give the present and past participles of *apprendre*, *surprendre*, *comprendre*; the first person plural of the subjunctive present of *entreprendre*, and the imperative of *reprendre*.

IDIOMS.

To know, *connaître* (is equivalent to 'to be acquainted with') :—

I know this gentleman	<i>je connais ce monsieur</i>
you know this part of the country	<i>vous connaissez ce pays-ci.</i>

To know, *savoir* :—

I know my lesson	<i>je sais ma leçon</i>
I know that by heart	<i>je sais cela par cœur</i>

'I know,' followed by the conjunction 'that,' expressed or understood, is always *je sais que* :—

I know that he is here	<i>je sais qu'il est ici.</i>
------------------------	-------------------------------

LESSON XXXV.

VERBS AND PREPOSITIONS.—(Continued.)

238. Verbs requiring, before their object, a different preposition in French and in English :—

<i>blâmer de</i> , to blame for	<i>pourvoir à</i> , to provide for
<i>convenir de</i> , to agree upon	<i>prendre à</i> , to take from
<i>demander à</i> , to ask of	<i>punir de</i> , to punish for
<i>louer de</i> , to praise for	<i>remercier de</i> , to thank for
<i>ôter à</i> , to take from	<i>répondre de</i> , to answer for
<i>parler de</i> , to talk about	<i>rire de</i> , to laugh at
<i>penser à</i> , to think of (to bear in mind)	<i>s'informer de</i> , to inquire after .

e.g., I thank you **for** your note, *je vous remercie de votre billet.*

N.B.—*Pensez à moi* means ‘think of me, do not forget me;’ *que pensez-vous de moi?* means ‘what do you think of me? what is your **opinion** about me?’

Learn § 35 of the *Conversation*, and the verbs like *mettre*.

Model Exercise.

1. Le blâmez-vous de cela? 2. Oui, certainement, je l’en blâme. 3. L’avez-vous remercié de ce qu’il a fait pour vous? 4. Oui, je n’ai pas oublié ce détail important. 5. Vous serez puni de votre négligence et loué de votre ardeur au travail. 6. N’oubliez pas que “il pense à nous” n’est pas la même chose que “je sais ce qu’il pense de nous.”

Exercise 35.

1. What do you think now of the political situation? 2. If you think of him when he is (*future*) gone, do not tell your friends what (§ 207) you think of him. 3. Take this knife from this child, he will cut himself. 4. When I entered (*dans*) the room, they were talking about you. 5. I do not like this man, he laughs at everything one says. 6. Inquire after your friend’s uncle, he is very ill. 7. Do not ask that of a man who has no sense.

Give the past participle of *omettre*, *soumettre*, *compromettre*, and the singular of the present indicative of *permettre* and *admettre*.

IDIOMS AND HINTS.

to succeed (to obtain success)

réussir

to succeed (to come after)

succéder à

Mr. Jones is going to marry Miss Brown

Monsieur Jones va épouser Mademoiselle Brown

they were married yesterday the Reverend Mr. Thomas married them

ils se sont mariés hier le Révérend Thomas les a mariés.

LESSON XXXVI.

VERBS AND PREPOSITIONS.—(Continued.)

239. Verbs requiring a preposition in French before their object and none in English :—

avoir besoin de, to want
changer de, to change
commander à, to command
déplaire à, to displease
désobéir à, to disobey.
douter de, to doubt
obéir à, to obey
ordonner à, to order
pardonner à, to forgive
plaire à, to please

résister à, to resist
ressembler à, to resemble
se défier de, to mistrust
se fier à, to trust
se servir de, to use
se souvenir de, to remember
succéder à, to succeed (to
 come after)
toucher à, to touch.

e.g., il n'obéit pas à ses parents, he does not obey his parents.

Learn § 36 of the *Conversation*, and the verbs like *craindre*.

Model Exercise.

1. Cet enfant est insupportable, il ne veut obéir à personne. 2. Vous souvenez-vous de ce que je vous ai dit? 3. Je m'en souviens fort bien. 4. Je n'ai pu résister à la tentation d'acheter ce magnifique ananas. 5. Défiez-vous de lui, il est trompeur. 6. Ne touchez pas à cela. Je n'y toucherai plus.

Exercise 36.

1. I want this dictionary; I cannot lend it to you now. 2. You do not use your grammar often, for (*car*) you make a great many

mistakes. 3. You have, I hope, forgiven your brother. 4. He is weak, he cannot resist temptation. 5. Do not touch this. 6. Remember me when you are (*future*) in those distant lands. 7. He says that he mistrusts those who mistrust others; he must (*doit*) therefore mistrust himself.

Give the past participle of *plaindre*, and all the parts of *contraindre* which contain a g.

• IDIOMS AND HINTS.

a library (a bookshelf or a room in which there are books kept)	<i>une bibliothèque</i>
a bookseller's shop	<i>une librairie</i>
to go for a drive, a ride	<i>faire une promenade, en voiture, à cheval.</i>

LESSON XXXVII.

VERBS AND PREPOSITIONS.—(Continued.)

(See preceding list.)

240. *Pardonner* requires *à* only when the object is a person : *pardonnez à vos ennemis*, pardon your enemies ; otherwise it requires no preposition : *pardonner une faute*, to forgive a fault.

241. *Se souvenir de* and *se rappeler* both mean to remember ; but *se souvenir* requires *de* (governs the genitive), and *se rappeler* takes no preposition (governs the accusative), hence : 'I remember it' will be *je m'en souviens* or *je me le rappelle*.

242. Before a French infinitive, the following verbs require a different preposition to that which they take before a noun :—

chercher à (234), to try to
demander à or de (234), to ask to
souhaiter de (235 N.B.), to wish to
oublier de (no preposition before a noun), to forget to
commander de (239), to command to
ordonner de (239), to order to
pardonner de (240), to forgive for.

c.g. he ordered his servant to leave the house, *il ordonna à son domestique de quitter la maison.*

The other verbs given in the preceding lists take the same preposition before an infinitive or a noun, or else are not used before an infinitive.

243. Verbs expressing motion do not generally take a preposition or a conjunction before an infinitive: *venir voir, aller dire, courir chercher*, to come and see, to go and tell, to run and fetch.

Learn § 37 of the *Conversation*, also verbs like *contredire*.

Model Exercise.

1. Que faites-vous donc? 2. Je cherche mon crayon. 3. Vous cherchez à me persuader qu'il a tort. 4. J'ai oublié mon portefeuille. 5. Et moi aussi, j'ai oublié de prendre le mien. 6. Te souviens-tu de notre voyage en Suisse? 7. Je me le rappelle parfaitement. 8. Pardonnez à cet enfant. 9. Je lui pardonne sa désobéissance. 10. Venez me voir demain.

Exercise 37.

1. Forgive your enemies. 2. My father forgives easily the faults which I commit from (*par*) negligence. 3. He tries to prove that I did it on purpose (*exprès*). 4. He has forgotten to bring me what I asked him. 5. Yes,

he has forgotten my books also. 6. Do you remember (*se souvenir*) that? 7. No, I do not remember (*se rappeler*) it. 8. I forgive you for having (*infinitive*) upset the ink.

Give the second person plural present indicative of *prédire*, *médire*, *interdire*, and *dédire*.

GENDERS.—The adjective **after** *gens* is always masculine: *ces gens-là sont heureux*, those people are happy.

LESSON XXXVIII.

VERBS AND PREPOSITIONS.—(Continued.)

244. Verbs requiring à before a name of person or animal drop **à** before a *pronoun* relating to a **person** or an **animal**. The pronoun is then placed before or after the verb according to the rules (§§ 59-61).

245. Donner à: *il donne un livre à sa sœur*, *il lui donne un livre*, he gives his sister a book, he gives her a book; *il donne du pain à son chien*, *il lui donne du pain*, he gives his dog some bread, he gives him bread.

246. EXCEPTIONS:—(a.) Reflexive verbs cannot drop the preposition **à** before a pronoun, e.g., *s'intéresser à*, *il s'intéresse à lui*, not 'il lui s'intéresse,' he takes interest in him.

247. (b.) Verbs compounded with a noun cannot drop **à** before a pronoun, as: *avoir affaire à*, to have to do with; *faire allusion à*, to allude to;

prendre garde à, to mind ; e.g., *prends garde à lui*, mind him, beware of him.

Learn § 38 of the *Conversation*, also *conduire* and the verbs conjugated like it.

Model Exercise.

1. Ce fripon en impose à beaucoup de personnes. 2. Il nous en a imposé aussi. 3. A-t-il succédé à son oncle ? 4. Oui, il lui a succédé. 5. Ne vous fiez pas à ce charlatan. 6. N'ayez pas peur, je ne me fie pas à lui, *also* je ne m'y fie pas. 7. Avez-vous eu souvent affaire à ces individus ? 8. Non, je n'ai jamais eu affaire à eux. 9. Ne leur donnez pas votre confiance.

Exercise 38.

1. Give that joiner a piece of wood, and he will make you a box. 2. Give him this piece here. 3. Complain (*se plaindre à*) to your father. 4. I will complain to him. 5. Are you alluding to (*faire allusion à*) my cousin ? 6. It is to him that I am alluding. 7. Do you intend this for (*destiner à*) your sister ? 8. I intend it for her.

Give the present participle of *construire*, *réduire*, *cuire*, and the second person plural imperfect subjunctive of *instruire*, *reproduire*, and *traduire*.

GENDERS.—The adjective before *gens* : if the adjective or the article immediately preceding *gens* **has not a distinct form for the feminine**, any other adjective preceding that one will be put in the masculine : *tous ces bons et honnêtes gens*, all these good and honest people ; *tous les gens sensés*, all sensible people ; *tous ces gens-là*, all those people.

LESSON XXXIX.

EXCEPTIONS TO RULE 244.—(Continued.)

248. (c.) The preposition **à** is not dropped before a pronoun relating to a person or an animal with verbs of motion, *l'enfant courut à lui*, the child ran up to him.

249. (d.) The preposition **à** cannot be dropped with the following verbs:—

en appeler à, to appeal to
boire à, to drink to
penser à, to think of (to bear
 in mind)
tenir à, to value

songer à, to think of
recourir à, to have recourse
 to
renoncer à, to give up
être à, to belong to.

e.g., *cela est à moi*, this belongs to me; *pensez à lui*, think of him. Not 'cela m'est' or 'pensez-lui.'

250. With reference to names of things use **à** with the noun, or drop **à** and use **y** (for the place of *y* see §§ 59-61): *veiller à, il faut veiller à cela*, or *il faut y veiller*, that must be looked to; *pensez à cela*, think of that, bear that in mind; or *pensez-y*, think of it; *il s'intéresse à cela*, or *il s'y intéresse*, he takes interest in that. Though **y** is used in referring to persons it is safer to use *lui*, *à lui*, as the case may be.

Learn § 39 of the *Conversation*, and the verbs *partir*, *sortir*, *s'en aller* and *sentir*.

Model Exercise.

1. Va trouver ton père. 2. Oui, cher enfant, viens à moi. 3. Je tiens à mon ami, mais il

ne tient pas à moi. 4. Songez à votre fils qui se bat pour son pays. 5. Je pense à lui constamment. 6. J'y pense tous les jours. 7. A-t-il renoncé à son projet? 8. Il y a renoncé depuis longtemps.

Exercise 39.

1. Had he not recourse to you in his distress? 2. Yes, he has had recourse to me several times (*fois*). 3. The poet here alludes to that unfortunate queen. 4. I do not think that he alludes to her here. 5. Do you think you [*drop*] can (*infinitive*) grant me that request? 6. I shall think (*songer*) of it. 7. Why did you not appeal to him? 8. I have appealed to him.

Give the third person singular present indicative of *sortir*, *servir*, *sentir*, *partir*.

GENDERS.—The adjective **before** *gens*.—If the adjective immediately preceding *gens* **has a distinct form for the feminine** it is put in the feminine (any adjective preceding that one is also put in the feminine): *toutes ces bonnes gens*, all those good people; according to this and the two preceding rules the following is correct: *les vieilles gens sont soupçonneux*, old people are suspicious.

LESSON XL.

THE AUXILIARIES.

251. Reflexive verbs are all conjugated with *être*: *je m'étais assis*, I had sat down; from *s'asseoir*.

252. Twelve neuter verbs given below are conjugated with *être*. Their meaning will be

found in the vocabulary : *aller, arriver, décider, échoir—éclorre, entrer—mourir, naître, partir—sortir, tomber (and retomber)—venir (also devenir, intervenir—parvenir, revenir and survenir)*; e.g., *il était entré dans la chambre*, he had entered the room.

253. Avoir marks the action, **être** marks the state : *il a passé très vite*, he went by very quickly ; *il est passé*, he has gone by ; *il a grandi de deux pouces en un an*, he has grown two inches in a year ; *il est grandi*, he has grown (I find him grown) ; thus *vieillir, cesser*, etc.

254. Some verbs have a different sense with a different auxiliary :

With **être**,
convenir, to agree
demeurer, to remain

With **avoir**,
convenir, to please, to suit
demeurer, to lodge, to dwell.

255. Use avoir with verbs which govern the accusative, and with the great majority of neuter verbs. The exceptions are given in § 251.

Learn § 40 of the *Conversation*, and the verbs *paraître* and *envoyer*.

Model Exercise.

1. Je me suis approché du feu, je me suis chauffé les mains et je me suis brûlé. 2. Pourquoi as-tu fait cela ? Parce que cela m'a convenu. 3. Il est convenu, n'est-ce pas, que vous viendrez demain ? 4. Oui, monsieur, c'est convenu (*see the Lesson on Ce and Il*). 5. Mon ami Ernest est très vieilli. 6. Il a beaucoup vieilli depuis la mort de sa femme. 7. Je ne sais pas ce qu'il est devenu.

Exercise 40.

1. These children have behaved very well.
 2. He has left his family and his country, he is gone for ever. 3. They have fallen into (*en*) bad hands. 4. I have lived in many houses, and I find that this one is the most comfortable of all. 5. If you had remained with us you would have seen something fine. 6. If the situation of this house had pleased me I would have taken it. 7. We had agreed to (*de*) do it yesterday. 8. He passed (*perfect*) like lightning.

Give the past participle of *paraître*, and the future of *envoyer*.

GENDERS.—*Gens*, in expressions like *gens de lettres*, literary men; *gens de mer*, sailors, etc., is always masculine.

LESSON XII.

THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

256. The present participle expressing action is invariable: *elle accourt comme une folle effrayant tout le monde*, she rushes up like a mad woman frightening everybody; *obéissant à vos ordres elle est venue ici*, obeying your orders she came here.

257. The present participle expressing state, quality, is called a verbal adjective, and is variable: *elle était effrayante à voir*, she was frightful to look at; *elle a agi en fille obéissante*, she has acted like an obedient girl.

258. The present participle is not so much used in French as in English : **en** is the only preposition which can come before it : *elle chante en travaillant*, she sings whilst she works ; **en travaillant bien il fera des progrès**, by working hard he will get on.

259. I see him coming and similar phrases must not be translated by a present participle, but by **qui**, etc., *je le vois qui vient* ; *je l'entends qui parle*, I hear him speaking ; the infinitive may often be used ; *je le vois venir*, *je l'entends parler*.

Learn § 41 of the *Conversation*, and the verbs *souffrir*, *offrir*, *ouvrir*.

Model Exercise.

1. En mettant le pied sur la marche j'ai glissé. 2. Voyez-les, charmant tout le monde par leur grâce et leur esprit. 3. Ces dames sont charmantes. 4. Je l'ai trouvé qui riait tout seul comme un fou, peut-être comme un sage. 5. Silence ! j'entends venir quelqu'un.

Exercise 41.

1. Listen ! I hear the carriage coming. 2. This man has always a newspaper in his (*à la*) hand ; he reads it while (*en*) walking, breakfasting, and dining. 3. I saw him gliding cautiously along the wall. 4. They are in this room amusing everybody by their tricks. 5. I saw them the other day, but I did not find them amusing.

Give the imperative and the past participle of *souffrir*,

GENDERS.—Nouns which change their meaning with their gender: *le livre*, the book, *la livre*, the pound; *le manche*, the handle, *la manche*, the sleeve; *le mémoire*, the bill, *la mémoire*, the memory.

LESSON XLII.

THE PAST PARTICIPLE.

260. The past participle without an auxiliary verb is treated like an adjective: *des habits déchirés*, torn garments.

261. With the auxiliary *être* (except in reflexive verbs, § 265) the past participle agrees with the subject: *sa robe est déchirée*, her dress is torn; *elle est venue*, she has come.

262. The past participle conjugated with *avoir* agrees in gender and number with the direct object (accusative case), but **only if the direct object precedes it**: *les pommes que j'ai mangées*, the apples which I have eaten; *où sont les pommes? je les ai mangées*; where are the apples? I have eaten them.

N.B.—When *vous* refers to one person only, the participle is singular.

Consequently, if the direct object (accusative) comes after the participle, or if there is no direct object (accusative), the participle will not change: *j'ai mangé les pommes*, I have eaten the apples; *elles n'ont pas encore mangé*, they have not eaten yet; *la personne à qui j'ai parlé*, the person to whom I have spoken; *la personne dont j'ai parlé*, the person of whom I have spoken.

Learn § 42 of the *Conversation*, and the verbs *joindre*, *peindre*, and *feindre*.

Model Exercise.

1. Quel voyage! nous avons été secouées, bousculées, arrêtées et fouillées! 2. Après tous vos malheurs, mesdames, vous êtes enfin revenues. 3. N'arrosez pas les fleurs que j'ai déjà arrosées. 4. Ils ont coupé les branches de ces arbres. 5. Ils leur ont échappé, heureusement.

Exercise 42.

1. The person to whom I had entrusted my secrets has betrayed them. 2. They came home (*rentrer*) tired, wet, and famished. 3. I have seen his paintings, and I do not think (*trouver*) them good. 4. These ladies came (*perfect*) to see you yesterday. 5. They are the ladies to whom I introduced you. 6. You have received several letters this morning; have you read them all?

Give the singular present indicative of *joindre*, and the present subjunctive of *peindre* and *feindre*.

GENDERS.—Nouns which change their meaning with their gender: *le mousse*, the cabin-boy, *la mousse*, the moss; *un aigle*, an eagle, *une aigle*, a standard; *le vase*, the vase, *la vase*, the slime; *le page*, the page (boy), *la page*, the page; *le souris*, the smile, *la souris*, the mouse.

LESSON XLIII.

PAST PARTICIPLES.—(Continued.)

263. **Impersonal Verbs**, and verbs used as such, cannot have a direct object, hence their past participle is invariable.

264. Beware of verbs which govern the accusative in English and another case in French: the children who have disobeyed us, *les enfant qui nous ont désobéi* (*nous* is for *à nous*, we say *désobéir à*). See list § 239.

265. The past participle of a reflexive verb agrees in gender and number with the direct object (accusative case) if the direct object precedes it (exactly the same rule as in § 262): *elle s'est coupée*, she has cut herself. To find out the accusative, change the auxiliary into *avoir*: *elle s'est coupé la main* (*elle s'a coupé la main*) *la main* is the accusative and comes after, hence no agreement; *s'* in this last sentence is the dative; the sentence is equivalent to "elle a coupé la main à elle-même."

266. Beware of verbs which are reflexive or reciprocal in French, and do not govern the accusative: *elles se sont pardonné*, *se* is dative, not accusative, for we say *pardonner à*. See list § 239.

Learn § 43 of the *Conversation*, also *croître* and *cueillir*.

Model Exercise.

1. Quelles chaleurs il y a eu l'été dernier !
2. Vous regrettez maintenant votre force dont vous avez abusé.
3. Ils se sont battus comme des lions.
4. Ils nous ont déplu.
5. Ils se sont plu à la taquiner.
6. Elle s'est mariée un lundi.

Exercise 43.

1. He has not yet equalled those whom he has succeeded.
2. These are not the brushes which I used (*perfect*) yesterday.
3. She fainted

(*perfect*) when she saw that her mother had wounded herself. 4. Everybody remarked the heat we had (*faire, impersonal*) on [drop] Wednesday. 5. These boys have been playing with gunpowder, and have burnt their hands. 6. These two men have been fighting, and they have given one another violent blows. Give the imperative of *cueillir*, the present indicative and the past participle of *croître*.

GENDERS.—Nouns which change their meaning with their gender: *le tour*, the trick, *la tour*, the tower; *le pendule*, the pendulum, *la pendule*, the clock; *le poste*, the station, the employment, *la poste*, the post-office; *le voile*, the veil, *la voile*, the sail.

LESSON XLIV.

THE IMPERFECT INDICATIVE.

Je parlais and *je parlai* both mean, “I spoke”; which of the two must be used?

267. Use the imperfect in French: (*a.*) When you have, in English, the compound imperfect (“was” with the participle present), or when you could use it without altering the sense: I was reading when you came in, *je lisais quand vous êtes entré*; whilst he spoke (was speaking) all listened, *tandis qu’il parlait, tout le monde écoutait*.

268. (*b.*) Use the imperfect in French when you could change the English into “used to,” when you wish to express duration, or when an action is represented as frequent: when I was in Paris I spoke French even to Englishmen (I used to),

quand j'étais à Paris je parlais français même aux Anglais.

269. (c.) Use the imperfect in French when you are describing what a person, a thing, or a place were like in time past: he was very kind, *il était très bon.*

270. (d.) Use the imperfect after *si*, if, to correspond with the conditional.

Learn § 44 of the *Conversation*, and the verbs *vivre* and *vêtir*.

Model Exercise.

1. Je commençais à croire que vous ne viendriez pas. 2. Je ne pouvais pas venir; j'étais très occupé quand j'ai reçu votre lettre. 3. Quand j'étais jeune ma bonne me tenait tranquille en me racontant des histoires. 4. Son père était grand et mince; il avait une cicatrice au front et prisait constamment. 5. Je vous le dirais si je le savais.

Exercise 44.

1. If I went there I would stay there a fortnight (15 days). 2. I would go with you if I were not so busy. 3. They were walking (*se promener*) quietly on the road when these men attacked them. 4. My last house was in a very favourable situation; we had a fine view before us. 5. He was (*see Lesson on Ce and Il*) one of those men whom one never forgets; he had the strength of a bull, and the gentleness of a woman. 6. He used to astonish us by his patience. 7. I was very happy when I was at school, but happier still when I was at home (*chez nous*).

Give the past definite and the past participle of *vivre*, and the singular of the present indicative of *vêtir*.

GENDERS.—Nouns masculine in the singular, feminine in the plural: *un amour, un délice, un orgue*, love, delight, organ; *les premières amours, de joyeuses délices, de belles orgues*.

LESSON XLV.

THE PAST DEFINITE, THE PERFECT, THE PASSIVE.

271. The past definite is called the **historical tense** because it is much used to relate historical events, since *it expresses that a thing was done at a time completely past of which nothing remains*: if you wish to give the date of Molière's death, say: *il mourut en 1673*; *mourait* would mean "was dying," or, perhaps, "was in the habit of dying."

"I wrote to my brother yesterday;" to translate this ask yourself if "wrote" means, "I was writing," "I used to write;" if the answer is no, say: *j'écrivis hier à mon frère*.

272. In conversation the perfect is much more commonly used than the past definite.

273. The passive is not so much used in French as in English; besides the way mentioned in § 208 (*on*, etc.) there is another way of avoiding the passive, by using a reflexive verb, thus: this machine is composed of two parts, *cette machine se compose de deux parties*; his writing is not easily read, *son écriture ne se lit pas facilement*.

Learn § 45 of the *Conversation*, and the verbs *vaincre* and *valoir*.

Model Exercise.

1. Lorsque mon ami mourut, je me chargeai de l'éducation de ses enfants. 2. J'ai acheté du papier ce matin pour vous écrire, et je vous écrivais lorsque vous êtes entré. 3. Aussitôt que j'eus reçu votre télégramme, j'envoyai chercher une voiture qui me conduisit au chemin de fer. 4. Savez-vous comment cela se fabrique ? 5. Non, je ne sais pas comment on fabrique cela.

Exercise 45.

1. The enemy came, besieged the city, sacked it, and set fire to it. 2. I was in the garden when I heard cries come from the house. 3. How did you spend the morning (*matinée*)? 4. I worked during the whole morning. 5. This paper is manufactured in our neighbourhood. 6. This part of the machine is not easily replaced.

Give the parts of *vaincre* which contain a **q**, and those of *valoir* beginning with **vau**.

LESSON XLVI.

THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

In "I think that he is gone," "I think," is the principal clause, "that he is gone," is the subordinate clause.

274. Use the subjunctive in the subordinate clause if the principal clause contains:—

(a.) A verb expressing **doubt, desire, fear, surprise, supposition, will**: *Je doute qu'il réussisse*, I doubt if he will succeed; *je veux qu'il vienne*, I insist on his coming.

(b.) Use the subjunctive in the subordinate clause if the principal contains an **interrogation**: *pensez-vous qu'il vienne?* do you think he will come?

(c.) Use the subjunctive in the subordinate clause if the principal contains **a negative**: *Je ne crois pas qu'il vienne*, I do not think he will come.

(d.) Use the subjunctive if the two clauses are joined by any of the **conjunctions** contained in § 312, e.g. *prêtez-lui votre livre afin qu'il puisse écrire son thème*, lend him your book that he may write out his exercise.

Learn § 46 of the *Conversation*, and the verbs *suivre*, *suffire*, and *confire*.

Model Exercise.

1. Je veux que vous veniez me voir plus souvent. 2. Vous nous laisserez sur la table des allumettes et une bougie en cas que nous revenions tard. 3. Je présume que cette écriture est la sienne. 4. Je ne présume pas que ce soit là son écriture. 5. Soupçonnez-vous qu'il veuille vous tromper? 6. Je soupçonne qu'il veut me tromper.

Exercise 46.

1. I have put the milk into the safe for fear the cat should drink it. 2. He did it without my seeing it (*without that*, etc.). 3. I am astonished that you should still make so

many mistakes. 4. Are you quite (*bien*) sure that he is there? 5. I am quite sure that he was there a minute ago (*il y a une*, etc.). 6. I think (*je pense*) that he has taken his key. 7. I do not think that he has taken his key.

Give the present and past participles, and the imperative of *confire*, *suffire* and *suivre*.

LESSON XLVII.

THE SUBJUNCTIVE.—(Continued.)

274. (Continued.) (e.) Use the subjunctive in the subordinate clause if the principal clause contains an **impersonal** verb: **il faut qu'il vienne**, he must come; except after *il s'ensuit*, *il résulte*, *il arrive*, it follows, results, happens, and those expressing certainty, as *il est évident*.

(f.) Use the subjunctive after a relative pronoun **preceded by a superlative**, or the words *seul*, alone, *premier*, first, *dernier*, last: *c'est le seul qui soit capable de le faire*, he is the only one who is capable of doing it; *c'est l'homme le plus comme il faut que je connaisse* (see the Lesson on *Ce* and *Il*), he is the most gentlemanly man I know.

(g.) Use the subjunctive after **que** used for **si** (§ 315).

(h.) If you have a past tense in the principal clause, use a past tense in the subordinate: "I wanted him to come with you," *je voulais qu'il vînt avec vous*.

Learn § 47 of the *Conversation*, and the verbs *rire* and *résoudre*.

Model Exercise.

1. Il importe que vous soyez aimable avec lui. 2. Ce sont les seuls de la classe qui aient compris la règle. 3. C'est l'homme le plus gros que j'aie jamais vu. 4. Si je vous enseignais le français et que je vous fisse faire des progrès rapides, seriez-vous content? 5. Il aurait fallu que vous prissiez des leçons plus régulièrement. 6. Est-il certain qu'il vienne aujourd'hui? (§ 274 B.) 7. Il est certain qu'il viendra.

Exercise 47.

1. It is better (*il vaut mieux*) that it should be so. 2. It is certain that it is so. 3 He is the first who came to congratulate me. 4. If you come here to-morrow, and if you come early (*de bonne heure*) I will show you something very interesting. 5. I shut the window because I was afraid that the child would fall out [*drop*].

Give the two past participles of the present indicative of *résoudre*, and the present subjunctive of *vire*.

LESSON XLVIII.

ON THE ARTICLE.

275. Repeat the article in French before every noun.

276. The article is used in French although not used in English:—

(a.) Before a noun taken in a general sense:
 “man is mortal,” *l'homme est mortel*.

(b.) The article is used in French before *virtues, vices, sciences, arts, metals*, and any part of speech used as a noun: "gold is precious," *l'or est précieux*.

277. A different article is used in French and in English in the following and similar cases: sixpence **a** pound, *douze sous la livre*; a shilling **a** hundred, and five shillings **a** thousand, *un "shilling" le cent et cinq "shillings" le mille*.

278. In **such a**, the place of the article is different in French and in English: they make **such a** noise, *ils font un tel bruit*.—**Such a** is generally rendered by **si** and an adjective: he is such a fine fellow! *c'est un si bel homme*;—**such a** is rendered by **tant de** without an adjective: they make such a noise, *ils font tant de bruit*.

279. The article is not used in French though it is used in English:—

(a.) Before cent and mille (except as in § 277 "so much the hundred, the thousand") a hundred men, a thousand men, *cent hommes, mille hommes*.

(b.) In sentences like the following: he earns thirty shillings **a** week, *il gagne trente "shillings" par semaine*.

(c.) What **a** fine fellow! *quel bel homme!*

(d.) After *il est*, "**HE** is," do not use the article in French, if *il est* is followed by an adjective (or any word used as such) expressing *nationality, trade, profession*. **HE** is a Frenchman, *il est Français*; **HE** is a doctor, *il est médecin*. (See the Lesson on *Ce* and *Il*.)

280. Do not use the article in French when the verb and the noun form an idiomatic expression: to wrong, *faire tort*; to pay attention, to pay a visit, *faire attention*, *rendre visite*,—or in any expressions compounded with *avoir*: to be hungry, wrong, right, etc., *avoir faim*, *tort*, *raison*. (See also *Synopsis* §§ 8, 56.)

Learn § 48 of the *Conversation*, also *prévoir* and *plaire*.

• Model Exercise.

1. Le réséda, la violette, le muguet et la rose sont des fleurs qui sentent bon. 2. Combien vendez-vous ces prunes la livre? 3. Je vous les vendrai, à vous, cinquante centimes le demi-kilo (1 *kilo*=2 *livres*). 4. Combien gagnez-vous par mois? Je gagne trois cents francs par mois. 5. Est-il médecin ou avocat? 6. Il est professeur. 7. Avez-vous soif? 8. Non, je n'ai ni soif ni faim.

• Exercise 48.

1. They paid us a visit last summer. 2. He is an ironmonger, and his brother is a grocer. 3. What a disagreeable man! 4. Meat is much dearer than formerly. 5. This ribbon costs three francs a yard. 6. He has one hundred pounds to spend a day, and I earn a hundred pounds a year. 7. He is fond of music. •

Give the participles of *plaire*, and the future of *prévoir*.

LESSON XLIX.

NOUNS.

281. Gens is indefinite: "some people say..." *il y a des gens qui disent*; do not, therefore, use *gens* with a numeral, but use *personnes*; "there were more than fifty people," *il y avait plus de cinquante personnes*. (For adjectives with *gens*, see pp. 63—66.)

282. People: translate people by "*peuple* when you mean a nation, or "the people" opposed to the "upper classes:" *le peuple anglais, le peuple et l'aristocratie* (pronounce *tie* like "see").

283. Translate people by gens in the following sentence, and in similar cases: "many people like it," *beaucoup de gens l'aiment*.

284. Translate people by monde with reference to a place of meeting: *il y avait beaucoup de monde*, there were many people; *le monde sort du théâtre*, the people are coming out of the theatre.

285. "Tout le monde" means "everybody:" "all the world" would be *le monde entier*.

286. Année, journée, matinée, soirée are used with reference to duration of time, and especially with the idea that something is or will be going on during the year, day, morning, evening: *une matinée musicale*, a morning performance (for music); *il travaille toute la soirée*, he works the whole evening; also with reference to the weather: *quelle belle soirée!* what a fine evening!

287. Use **an, jour, matin, soir**, with reference to the division of time called year, etc. : he arrived one fine morning, *un beau matin il arriva* ; come in the morning, not in the evening, *venez le matin, pas le soir* ; for last year, *l'année dernière* is, perhaps, more used than *l'an dernier*.

Learn § 49 of the *Conversation*, also the verbs *haïr* and *fuir*.

Model Exercise.

1. Je travaille mieux le soir que le matin.
2. Quant à moi je passe mes matinées à travailler pour pouvoir passer mes soirées avec ma famille.
3. L'expression 'tout le monde lui jette la pierre' signifie que tout le monde le blâme.
4. Combien de personnes y avait-il au concert?
5. Je ne sais pas, mais il y avait beaucoup de monde.

Exercise 49.

1. There are people who are never satisfied.
2. They have invited a great many people to dinner.
3. Remember that 'everybody' is not the same as 'the whole world' in French.
4. When are you coming (*future*) to see me? in [*drop*] the morning or the evening?
5. I shall come and spend the evening with you.
6. The people in France are (*singular*) very thrifty.

Give the present indicative of *haïr*, and the present subjunctive of *fuir*.

LESSON L.

QUALIFYING ADJECTIVES.

288. In the following list the adjective may come before or after the noun, but it changes its meaning with its place.

<i>un livre</i> cher , an expensive book	<i>mon</i> cher <i>ami</i> , my dear friend
<i>un habit</i> nouveau , a new-fashioned coat	<i>un</i> nouvel <i>habit</i> , a fresh coat
<i>un poète</i> pauvre , a needy poet	<i>un</i> pauvre <i>poète</i> , an indifferent poet.
<i>son habit</i> propre , his clean coat	<i>son</i> propre <i>habit</i> , his own coat
<i>un homme</i> grand , a tall man	<i>un</i> grand <i>homme</i> , a great man
<i>un homme</i> brave , a brave man	<i>un</i> brave <i>homme</i> , an honest fellow.

Remark, that in most of the above examples, the adjective, after the noun, is taken in its literal sense and before the noun in a figurative sense.

289. **Nu** and **demi**, before the noun, are invariable, and joined to it by a hyphen : **nu-pieds**, barefooted ; *une* **demi-heure**, half-an-hour.

After the noun *nu* takes its gender and number and *demi* its gender **only** : *les* **pieds nus** ; *deux heures et* **demie**.

290. **Feu**, late, deceased, before the article is invariable ; after the article it agrees with the noun : **feu la reine**, *la* **feue** *reine*.

Learn § 50 of the *Conversation*, and the verbs *moudre* and *luire*.

Model Exercise.

1. On dit qu'il est très sain de marcher nu-pieds. (*For 'il est', it is, see § 325 a.*) 2. Les hommes grands ne sont pas toujours de grands hommes. 3. Ce monsieur ne suit pas la mode; je le vois souvent avec un nouvel habit, mais jamais avec un habit nouveau. 4. Ce poète n'est pas riche, mais il a du talent, ce n'est pas un pauvre poète (*for 'ce', see § 322*). 5. Cet habit propre n'est pas son propre habit, car c'est moi qui le lui ai prêté.

Exercise 50.

1. He is (§ 322) an honest fellow, but I do not think that he is a brave man. 2. These children walk barefooted, and the stones do not hurt their bare feet. 3. What time is it?—It is (§ 325 b.) half-past ten. 4. Go and buy three pounds and a half of meat. 5. He follows the fashion, I see that he has a new coat.

- Give the present participle of *luire*, and the present indicative of *moudre*.

LESSON LI.

QUALIFYING ADJECTIVES.—(*Continued.*)

291. Adjectives requiring *of*, *from*, *with*, in English, take **de** in French: capable of, *capable de*; distant from, *loin de*; content with, *content de*.

292. Adjectives requiring *to* or *at*, in English, take **à** in French: it is contrary to the rule, *c'est contraire à la règle*.

EXCEPTIONS: accessory to, *complice de*; grieved at, *désespéré de*; to which add the expression: a slave to, *esclave de*.

293. 'Very sorry for' is *désolé de*; 'fit for' is *propre à*.

N.B.—I am very sorry for it, *je suis désolé de cela*; I am very sorry for you, *j'en suis désolé pour vous*.

294. **The superlative:** When *le plus* is equivalent to 'in the highest degree,' *le* is invariable: *c'est au mois de juin que les couleurs de ces roses sont le plus brillantes*, it is in June that the colours of these roses are the most brilliant, *i.e.*, brilliant in the highest degree, at their best.

Model Exercise.

1. C'est surtout au dernier acte que cette cantatrice a été le plus applaudie. 2. Il m'est arrivé un grand malheur! J'en suis désolé pour vous. 3. Le proverbe dit: loin des yeux, loin du cœur. 4. Elles sont désespérées du malheur qui vient de les frapper. 5. Je vois avec plaisir que vous êtes accessible à tous les bons sentiments.

Exercise 51.

1. Your son is worthy of you. 2. He is attentive to his duty. 3. I heard of (*apprendre*) your misfortune, and I am grieved at what has happened. 4. This is the time (*époque*) when the country is the most pleasant. 5. He is a [*drop*] slave to discipline. 6. I am glad of that. 7. We are very sorry for them. 8. These bottles are filled with choice (*de choix, last*) wines.

LESSON LII.

PREPOSITIONS.

(For prepositions used after verbs, see §§ 232 to 250, and after adjectives, §§ 291 to 294.)

295. Before, referring to time or order, is *avant*: he arrived before me, *il est arrivé avant moi*; he is before me on the list, *il est avant moi sur la liste*.

Before, referring to place, is *devant*: he is sitting before the fire, *il est assis devant le feu*.

296. With, after a participle, is *de* in French: he is pleased with me, *il est content de moi*. (For *with* after verbs, see §§ 236, 237.)

297. In, after a superlative, is always *de* (which combines, of course, with the article): the best man in the world, *le meilleur homme du monde*.

298. A is used before names of towns, villages, etc., to translate 'to,' 'at,' or 'in:': *je vais à Paris*, I am going to Paris; *il demeure à Paris*, he lives in Paris.

299. En is used before names of countries, to translate 'in:': *en Amérique*, in America; except when the article forms an inseparable part of the name, as in: *le Brésil, le Mexique, le Canada*: he is in Canada, *il est au Canada*; remark that *à* combines with the article.

300. After **quelque chose** and **rien**, use **de** before an adjective (§ 214).

Model Exercise.

1. Ils ont voyagé en Portugal, au Brésil, en Russie, au Mexique, partout enfin. 2. J'ai été en Espagne, j'ai demeuré longtemps à Madrid, et je suis revenu à Londres. 3. Je ne peux pas voir, vous êtes devant la fenêtre. 4. Les personnes âgées doivent passer avant les jeunes. 5. Il n'est jamais satisfait de ce qu'on lui donne.

Exercise 52.

1. I picked this fruit from (*sur*) the finest tree in the orchard. 2. This is too short, give me something longer. 3. Even if you start before me, you will not arrive there before me, because I can run faster than you. 4. In alphabetical order your name comes before mine. 5. I met this man everywhere I went, in Egypt, in Scotland, in China, and at Malta. 6. He is full of kindness for me. 7. The children had made a great heap of snow before our door.

LESSON LIII.

PREPOSITIONS.—(Continued.)

301. **Pour** is generally the right preposition to use after a verb for any English preposition meaning *in order to*: shout, *to* call his attention, (in order to), *criez pour appeler son attention*. (See Synopsis: for, *car*, § 106.)

302. Dans is used with the article or any other determinative, as the demonstrative and possessive adjectives; this shows that it has a precise and determinate sense; it is also equivalent to 'inside:' *mettez ceci dans l'armoire*, put this in the cupboard; *Paris est dans le département de la Seine*, Paris is in the department of the Seine.

303. En has a vague and general sense, and is not used with the article: *j'ai beaucoup voyagé en France*, I have travelled a good deal in France.

304. Before a pronoun put **en**, never *dans*: *voilà ce que j'aime en lui*, that is what I like in him.

305. En is the only preposition used before a present participle; the other prepositions are followed by the infinitive.

N.B.—The expression *chemin faisant*, on my way, his way, etc., does not take *en*.

Model Exercise.

1. *Chemin faisant nous causions ensemble de nos espérances.* 2. *Il voyage toujours en première classe.* 3. *J'entrai aussitôt dans mon compartiment (railway carriage).* 4. *Il y a de bons vins en France, surtout dans notre département.* 5. *Ils me font des compliments pour me mettre de (in) bonne humeur*

Exercise 53.

1. They like him very much, but I cannot understand what they find to like in him.

2. Your brother did it to please me. 3. Do something for me, for I have done something for you. 4. Where does he live? He lives in France. 5. In what part of France? 6. In the south, in the department of (*the*) Var.

LESSON LIV.

ADVERBS.

(For the place of adverbs, *see* Synopsis, § 92.)

306. Ne is used before the verbs of the subordinate clause (*see* 'clause,' Lesson XLVI.) :—

(a.) After words expressing *apprehension* or *fear*: *je crains qu'il ne vienne* (§ 274), I fear he will come.

(b.) Use **ne** after a *comparative* (of inequality, *i.e.* more or less), and *autre, autrement*, if the principal clause is neither interrogative nor negative: *il est plus fin que vous ne pensez*, he is sharper than you think; *il lit autrement qu'il ne parle*, he reads otherwise than he speaks.

But, on account of the negation and interrogation, say without **ne**: *il n'est pas moins fin que vous pensiez*; *lit-il autrement qu'il parle*?

(c.) Use **ne** after *à moins que* (but in no case after *sans que*): *j'irai à moins que vous ne le veuillez pas* (*see* § 312, Conjunctions), I shall go unless you do not wish me to.

(d.) Use **ne** after *empêcher*, to prevent: *j'empêche qu'il ne sorte*, I prevent him from going out. The infinitive construction is often preferred: *je l'empêche de sortir*.

Model Exercise.

1. On ne peut pas empêcher un fou de faire ses folies. 2. J'ai peur qu'il ne lui soit arrivé un accident. 3. Vous viendrez lundi à moins que je ne vous envoie une carte postale. 4. J'ai mieux réussi que je ne l'espérais. 5. Elle ne fut pas moins aimée qu'elle était aimable.

Exercise 54.

1. I fear ~~he~~ will be very angry when he hears (*future*) that you prevented your brother from working (*infinitive*). 2. Do that otherwise than he does it. 3. He must not do that otherwise than I do it. 4. Did he do that otherwise than you did? 5. He will not come, unless I go and fetch him. 6. Prevent him from coming in (*subjunctive*). 7. Do not prevent him from coming in.

LESSON LV.

ADVERBS. —(Continued.)

307. Pas and **point** must be dropped: after *savoir* used for *pouvoir* (§ 228): *je ne saurais vous le dire*, I cannot tell you.

308. Drop **pas** and **point** also after **que** used for *pourquoi*: **que ne le disiez-vous?** why did you not say so? (For *pourquoi ne le disiez-vous pas?*)

309. Ne...point is a stronger negative than *ne...pas*.

310. Plus tôt, sooner, is opposed to *plus tard*, later; **plutôt** means 'sooner,' i.e., **rather**.

N.B.—Sooner or later is *tôt ou tard*.

311. **Si**, yes, is used, instead of *oui*, to answer a question put negatively : **ne venez-vous pas ?** are you not coming? **Si**, yes I am, or **si fait**, yes, indeed, I am.

Model Exercise.

1. Avez-vous bien fermé les portes? 2. Oui, monsieur, elles sont bien fermées. 3. Vous ne m'avez pas rendu mon couteau. 4. Si fait, vraiment, et vous l'avez mis dans votre poche. 5. Pourquoi ne le demandiez-vous pas? 6. Que ne le demandiez-vous? 7. Soyez ici demain à six heures précises, ni plus tôt ni plus tard. 8. J'irais à pied dans la neige plutôt que de manquer mon rendez-vous.

Exercise 55.

1. Have you seen your brother this morning? Yes, I have seen him. 2. Have you not been to the post-office? Yes, I have been there. 3. Since (*puisque*) he offered you this book, why did you not take it? 4. I cannot (*savoir*) put up with (*souffrir*) that. 5. They will be punished sooner or later. 6. I would sooner stop at home than go there alone.

LESSON LVI.

CONJUNCTIONS.

312. The subjunctive must always be used after the following conjunctions:—

<i>afin que</i> , in order that	<i>non que</i> { not that
<i>à moins que (ne)</i> , unless	not but that
<i>avant que</i> , before	<i>pour que</i> , in order that
<i>en cas que</i> , in case	<i>pourvu que</i> provided that
<i>bien que</i> , although	<i>sans que</i> , without that
<i>de peur que (ne)</i> } for fear,	<i>pour peu que</i> { provided that
<i>de crainte que (ne)</i> } lest	
<i>jusqu'à ce que</i> , until	for ever so
<i>loin que</i> , far from	little that
<i>quoique</i> , although	<i>soit que</i> , whether that
	<i>supposé que</i> , supposing that

e.g., *j'irai avec vous bien que je sois fatigué*, I shall go with you, although I am tired.

Model Exercise.

1. Ne sortez pas trop tard, ~~sortez~~ avant qu'il fasse nuit. 2. Dépêchez-vous pour que nous soyons prêts en même temps qu'eux. 3. Faites votre devoir pour que votre conscience soit tranquille. 4. Supposé qu'il vous écrive, que feriez-vous? 5. Donnez la main à cet enfant de crainte qu'il ne se fasse écraser par les voitures.

Exercise 56.

1. I saw you yesterday, although you did not see me. 2. We will not go out unless it is (*faire*) very fine weather (*temps*). 3. Put all these things in order before your father comes. 4. I shall go, provided (*that*) you come with me. 5. He told me to (*de*) wait until he came (§ 274h). 6. Keep this for your father in case (*that*) he wants it.

LESSON LVII.

CONJUNCTIONS.—(Continued.)

313. Que, by itself, is often used instead of: *afin que, sans que, jusqu'à ce que, depuis que*: **montez que je vous parle** (*afin que*), come upstairs, that I may speak to you.

314. Que is also used to avoid the repetition of *comme*, as: *quand*, when; *si*, if: *quand il viendra et qu'il verra cela, il se fâchera*, when he comes, and (when he) sees that, he will be angry.

315. Que, used for *si*, requires the subjunctive: *s'il vient et qu'il vous voie ici, il se fâchera (et si...)*, if he comes and sees you here, he will be angry. (For the tense to use after **si**, see Synopsis, § 107.)

316. And, equivalent to 'in order to,' connecting two verbs in English, must be dropped in French: go and see, *allez voir*; come and fetch me, *venez me chercher*.

317. Quand and lorsque: *quand* can be used interrogatively, *lorsque* cannot: *tu iras quand (or lorsque) j'irai*, you will go, when I go; **quand iras-tu** ? when will you go?

Model Exercise.

1. *Quand viendront-ils nous voir* ? 2. *Lorsque vous les inviterez et qu'ils ne seront plus aussi occupés*. 3. *Ils sont entrés ici en plein jour sans qu'on les ait vus et que les chiens aient donné l'alarme*. 4. *S'il est reçu et qu'il soit dans les dix premiers, nous ferons ensemble un petit voyage d'agrément*. 5. *Courez voir ce qu'il y a là*.

Exercise 57.

1. If he comes and if (*que*) he asks for this book you can give it to him. 2. Wait until (*que*, only) I tell you to (*de*) start. 3. Go and see if your mother has come back. 4. When will he go back to school? 5. When he calls (*future*) you, and when (*que*, only) he asks (*future*) you where I am, tell him I am in (*au*) the drawing-room.

LESSON LVIII.

‘**EN**’

318. **En** translates the following English words expressed or inferred: (*a.*) **Some** or **any** (not followed by a noun), of it, of them: have you any marbles? yes, I have some; *avez-vous des billes? oui, j'en ai*; how many have you (of them)? *combien en avez-vous?* I have one, and Charles has eleven (of them), *j'en ai une et Charles en a onze*.

(*b.*) **Not any** (not followed by a noun) and **none** are translated by **en** with the negative: have they any money? they have not any (or none), *ont-ils de l'argent? ils n'en ont pas*.

(*c.*) **Hence, thence**, from there, from it, is **en**: have you seen the Exhibition? yes, I come from there, *oui, j'en viens*.

319. **Idioms and expressions containing en**: **en vouloir à**, to have a grudge against; **en imposer à**, to impose upon; **s'en prendre à**, to blame.

320. En cannot be governed by any other verb but those which take *de* (§§ 236, 238, 239, 241). I want it, *j'en ai besoin* (*avoir besoin de*) ; I like it, *je l'aime* (*aimer*, accusative, without a preposition).

321. Y is translated by to it, at it, in it, here, there, etc., expressed or inferred (*see* § 250) : does he come here often ? he does (come here), *vient-il ici souvent ? il y vient souvent* ; go there, *vas-y* ; he will bring them to us there, *il nous les y apportera*. (*See* place of **y** § 195 and §§ 59, 61.)

N.B.—**Y** cannot be governed by any other verbs but those which take *à* (*see* §§ 238—239).

Model Exercise.

1. Mon livre doit être dans votre bibliothèque. Non, il n'y est pas. 2. Voulez-vous des journaux ? Merci, j'en ai plus que je n'en pourrai lire aujourd'hui. 3. Portez donc cette lettre à la poste. 4. J'en viens à l'instant. 5. Alors je vais y aller moi-même. 6. Permettez que je vous donne du faisan. Merci, j'en ai encore. 7. Avez-vous un dictionnaire à me prêter ? Oui, j'en ai deux ; je vous en donnerai un.

Exercise 58.

1. They have a great deal of paper, but they will not give us any. 2. You have two French grammars, give me one of them. 3. I know he was at the gate, for I saw him there. 4. They owe us a grudge because we did not invite them. 5. Do not take that, I want it. 6. Learn your lesson, give the whole of your attention to it. 7. I went to the lecture, and as I was coming from it, I met my cousin.

LESSON LIX.

'CE' AND 'IL.'

322. HE IS (or *they are*) is translated by **c'est** (or *ce sont*) before a French article : *c'est un médecin*, he is a doctor ; *c'est un étourdi*, he is a giddy fellow ; *ce sont des étrangers*, they are foreigners ; *c'est le meilleur homme du monde*, he is the best man in the world.

323. He is (or *they are*) is translated by **il est** (or *ils sont*), when there is no article following in French, *i.e.*, before an adjective or a noun used as such : *il est étourdi*, he is giddy ; *il est médecin*, he is a doctor (*see* § 279 *d.*) ; *ils sont étrangers tous les deux*, both of them are foreigners.

324. IT IS is translated by **c'est** (*a.*) before a French adjective not followed by a subordinate clause with *que*, or an infinitive with *de* : *c'est ridicule*, it is ridiculous.

(*b.*) **It is** is translated by **c'est** when an infinitive with *à* follows : *c'est facile à dire, mais difficile à faire*, it is easy to say, but difficult to do.

(*c.*) **It is** is translated by **c'est** before a noun, a proper name, a pronoun, and dates : *c'est le vent*, it is the wind ; *c'est Charles*, it is Charles ; *c'est moi*, it is I ; *c'est le dix juin*, it is the tenth of June. (*See also* 'mine,' etc., by *c'est à*, § 204.)

325. It is is translated by **il est**, (*a.*) before a French adjective followed by a subordinate

clause with *que* or an infinitive with *de* : *il est heureux qu'il soit ici*, it is lucky that he is here ; *il est ridicule de faire cela*, it is ridiculous to do that.

(b.) **It is** is translated by **il est** to express time : *quelle heure est-il ? il est trois heures*, what is the time ? it is three o'clock.

N.B.—*Quelle heure est-ce ?* means 'what time is that' (striking) ?

326. Remark also : *à qui est cela ? c'est à moi*, whose is that ? it is mine ; **c'est** is used because there is no noun expressed, with which **il** could agree. *À qui est ce livre ? il est à moi* ; **il** is used to represent the noun expressed in the question. With the possessive pronoun use *c'est* : *c'est le mien*.

Note, in order to avoid confusion, that there are two distinct sets of rules ; one for **He is** (or they are), and another for **It is**.

Model Exercise.

1. Qu'est-ce que c'est que cela ? 2. C'est un instrument fort ingénieux appelé "plume électrique." 3. Est-ce utile ? 4. C'est fort utile. 5. Il est difficile de le croire. 6. C'est difficile à croire, mais c'est facile à prouver. 7. Cet instrument est à vous ? Oui, il est à moi. 8. Et ceci, est-ce à vous ? Non, c'est à mon frère.

Exercise 59.

1. Whose pen is this ? It is mine (use *à moi*). 2. Whose books are these ? They are mine (use *the possessive pronoun*). 3. What time (*heure*) is it ? It is ten o'clock, 4. Listen !

what time is that? 5. Is his brother a sailor? No, he is a soldier, and his cousin is a lawyer. 6. It is very amusing. 7. It is not amusing to (*de*) be here alone. 8. It is the tenth of September that they expect him. 9. It is pleasant. 10. It is pleasant to (*à*) look at.

LESSON LX.

• INTERJECTIONS.

327. The following are among the most commonly used: **Ah!** which expresses different feelings according to the intonation. **Allons!** equivalent to 'come!' **Eh bien!** **Quoi!** **Vraiment!** expressing surprise. **Fi! Fi donc!** indignation. **Pouah!** disgust. **Chut! Paix!** meaning 'silence!' **Gare!** mind! **Tiens!** **Tenez!** is used to attract attention; it does not only mean 'hold this!' but it is also equivalent to 'look!' **Vive...!** means 'long live...!' and when it is followed by a plural it becomes **Vivent...!** The following sentences show the use of some of these interjections.

Model Exercise.

1. 'Vive le roi! Vive la ligue!' se dit en parlant des gens qui changent facilement d'opinion. 2. Allons! dépêche-toi, ou nous serons en retard. 3. Pouah! qu'est-ce que c'est que cela? 4. Tiens! voici ce que tu cherches. 5. Eh bien! que faites-vous donc?

ALPHABETICAL LIST

OF

IRREGULAR VERBS.

INSTRUCTIONS.

1. One or two persons only are given when the *stem* remains the same throughout the tense, and when the other persons can be easily formed by adding the proper terminations, which have been learnt in the regular verbs (with whatever change of vowel may be indicated by the person given), *e.g.*, *je conn-us* will go on thus : tu conn-us, il conn-ut, nous conn-ûmes, vous conn-ûtes, ils conn-urênt. *Que je d-isse* will go on thus : que tu d-isses, qu'il d-ît, que nous d-issions, que vous d-issiez, qu'ils d-issent.

2. Wherever the *stem* is separated by a hyphen from the termination this means that the whole tense is used, although all the persons are not given.

3. The word "*thus* :" followed by one or more verbs signifies *conjugate thus*, *i.e.* conjugate in the same manner as the verb given as a model.

4. The meaning of the verbs which are to be conjugated like the model given will be found in the vocabulary.

5. All past participles form their feminine by adding *e*, and their plural by adding *s*, unless anything is said to the contrary.

6. The third person, singular and plural, of the imperative is borrowed from the present subjunctive, which is generally given in full.

N.B.—(a.) The compound tenses are not given, as they are always regularly formed with the auxiliary and the past participle.

(b.) Whenever nothing is said to the contrary, the auxiliary verb is *avoir* only.

(c.) Learn first the following verbs : *aller, venir, dire, faire, vouloir, voir, écrire, lire, prendre, boire, croire, dormir, pouvoir, mourir, connaître, savoir, mettre, naître*; and afterwards learn those which have the longest list of verbs conjugated like them.

(d.) The present infinitive is given first; the names of the other parts of the verbs are abbreviated thus:—

INDICAT.	indicative	<i>p.d.</i>	past definite
SUBJ.	subjunctive	<i>f.</i>	future
IMPT.	imperative	<i>c.</i>	conditional
<i>pr.</i>	present	<i>ppr.</i>	present participle
<i>imp.</i>	imperfect	<i>pp.</i>	past participle.

Absoudre (absolve); INDICAT. *pr.* j'absous, tu absous, il absout, nous absolvons, vous absolvez, ils absolvent; *imp.* j'absolv-ais; *p.d.* (none); *f.* j'absoudr-ai; *c.* j'absoudrais; SUBJ. *pr.* que j'absolv-e; *imp.* (none); IMPT. absous, absolvons, absolvez; *p.pr.* absolvant; *p.p.* absous, feminine absoute.

Thus: dissoudre, by substituting *dis* for *ab*.

Acquérir (acquire); INDICAT. *pr.* j'acquiers, tu acquiers, il acquiert, nous acquérons, vous acquérez, ils acquièrent; *imp.* j'acquér-ais, *p.d.* j'acqu-is; nous acquîmes, etc.; *f.* j'acquerr-ai; *c.* j'acquerrais; SUBJ. *pr.* que j'acquière, que tu acquières, qu'il acquière, que nous acquérions, que vous acquériez, qu'ils acquièrent; *imp.* que j'acqu-isse; IMPT. acquiers, acquérons, acquérez; *p.pr.* acquérant; *p.p.* acquis.

Thus: conquérir and reconquérir, both used in the infinitive, past definite, and compound tenses only; s'enquérir (*auxiliary être*), requérir; to conjugate these verbs you have only to change *ac* of acquérir into: *con*, *recon*, *en*, *re*.

Aller, auxiliary *être* (go); INDICAT. *pr.* je vais (*or* je vas), tu vas, il va, nous allons, vous allez, ils vont; *imp.* j'allais; *p.d.* j'all-ai, etc., nous allâmes, etc.; *f.* j'ir-ai, tu ir-as, etc.; *c.* j'ir-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que j'aille, que tu ailles, qu'il aille, que nous allions, que vous alliez, qu'ils aillent; *imp.* que j'all-asse; IMPT. va, allons, allez; *p.pr.* allant; *p.p.* allé.

Thus: s'en aller, conjugated in full on page 14. •

Assaillir (assail); INDICAT. *pr.* j'assaille, tu assailles il assaille, nous assaillons, vous assailliez, ils assaillent; *imp.* j'assaill-ais; *p.d.* j'assaill-is, nous assaillîmes, etc.; *f.* j'assaillir-ai; *c.* j'assaillir-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que j'assaille, que tu assailles, qu'il assaille, que nous assaillions, que vous assailliez, qu'ils assaillent; *imp.* que j'assaill-isse; IMPT. assaille, assaillons, assailliez; *p.pr.* assaillant; *p.p.* assailli.

Thus: tressaillir.

Asseoir (s') auxiliary *être* (sit down); INDICAT. *pr.* je m'assieds, tu t'assieds, il s'assied, nous nous asseyons, vous vous asseyez, ils s'asseyent; *imp.* je m'assey-ais; *p.d.* je m'ass-is, etc., nous nous assîmes; *f.* je m'assiérai,

also je m'asseyer-ai; *c.* je m'assiér-ais; also je m'asseyer-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je m'asseye, que tu t'asseyes, qu'il s'asseye, que nous nous asseyions, que vous vous asseyiez, qu'ils s'asseyent; *imp.* que je m'ass-isse; IMPR. assieds-toi, asseyons-nous, asseyez-vous; *ppr.* s'asseyant; *pp.* assis.

Thus: asseoir, leaving out the reflexive pronoun and using *avoir* for the auxiliary.

Asseoir (s') auxiliary *être* (sit down); the following is another way of conjugating this verb. It is at present less used than the one shown above; INDICAT. *pr.* je m'ass-ois; *imp.* je m'assoy-ais; *p.d.* je m'ass-is; *f.* je m'assoier-ai; *c.* je m'assoier-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je m'assoie; *imp.* que je m'ass-isse; IMPR. assois-toi, assoyons-nous, assoyez-vous; *ppr.* s'assoyant; *pp.* assis.

Thus: asseoir, leaving out the reflexive pronoun.

Battre (beat); INDICAT. *pr.* je bats, tu bats, il bat, nous battons, vous battez, ils battent; *imp.* je batt-ais; *p.d.* je batt-is, etc., nous batt-îmes, etc.; *f.* je battr-ai; *c.* je battr-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je batt-e; *imp.* que je batt-isse; IMPR. bats, battons, battez; *ppr.* battant; *pp.* battu.

Thus: abattre, combattre, débattre, rabattre, s'ébattre (auxiliary *être*); remark that you have only to put before battre the prefixes a, com, dé, ra, é.

Bénir (bless). *N.B.*—This verb is regular throughout, being conjugated like punir; it has, besides the regular past participle, an irregular one *béni*, *bénite*, used only for things blessed by the priest; *pain béni*, consecrated bread, *eau bénite*, holy water; *ces drapeaux ont été bénis*, these flags have been blessed.

Boire (drink); INDICAT. *pr.* je bois, tu bois, il boit, nous buvons, vous buvez, ils boivent; *imp.* je buv-ais; *p.d.* je b-us, etc., nous b-ûmes, etc.; *f.* je boir-ai; *c.* je boir-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je boive, que tu boives, qu'il boive, que nous buvions, que vous buviez, qu'ils boivent; *imp.* que je b-usse que tu b-usses, qu'il b-ût, que nous b-ussions, etc.; IMPR. bois, buvons, buvez; *ppr.* buvant; *pp.* bu.

Bouillir (boil); INDICAT. *pr.* je bous, tu bous, il bout, nous bouillons, vous bouillez, ils bouillent; *imp.* je bouill-ais; *p.d.* je bouill-is, etc., nous bouill-îmes, etc.; *f.* je bouillir-ai; *c.* je bouillir-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je bouille, que

tu bouilles, qu'il bouille, que nous bouillions, que vous bouilliez, qu'ils bouillent; *imp.* que je bouill-isse; *IMPT.* bous, bouillons, bouillez; *ppr.* bouillant; *pp.* bouilli.

Thus: ébouillir, rebouillir.

Bruire (rustle); *INDICAT. pr.* il bruit; *imp.* il bruissait, ils bruissaient. These are the only parts of the verb used.

Choir (fall); *pp.* masculine chu, feminine chue. No other parts used.

Clore (close); *INDICAT. pr.* je clos, tu clos, il clôt; *f.* je clor-ai, etc.; *c.* je clor-ais, etc.; *SUBJ. pr.* que je close, que tu closes, qu'il close, que nous closions, que vous closiez, qu'ils closent; *pp.* clos. The compound tenses and the above are the only parts used.

Conclure (conclude); *INDICAT. pr.* je conclus, tu conclus, il conclut, nous concluons, vous concluez, ils concluent; *imp.* je conclu-ais; *p.d.* je concl-us, etc., nous concl-ûmes, etc.; *f.* je conclur-ai; *c.* je conclur-ais; *SUBJ. pr.* que je conclue, que tu conclues, qu'il conclue, que nous concluons, que vous concluiez, qu'ils concluent; *imp.* que je concl-usse; *IMPT.* conclus, concluons, concluez; *ppr.* concluant; *pp.* conclu.

Thus: excludre, by substituting *ex* for *con*.

Conduire (conduct); *INDICAT. pr.* je conduis, tu conduis, il conduit, nous conduisons, vous conduisez, ils conduisent; *imp.* je conduis-ais; *p.d.* je conduis-is; *f.* je conduire-ai; *c.* je conduir-ais; *SUBJ. pr.* que je conduise, que tu conduises, qu'il conduise, que nous conduisons, que vous conduisiez, qu'ils conduisent; *imp.* que je conduis-isse; *IMPT.* conduis, conduisons, conduisez; *ppr.* conduisant; *pp.* conduit.

Thus: construire, cuire, déduire, détruire, éconduire, induire, instruire, introduire, luire, nuire, produire, reconduire, recuire, réduire, reluire, reproduire, séduire, traduire. You have only to substitute for *cond* the following;—*constr.* *c.* *déd.* *détr.* *écond.* *ind.* *instr.* *introd.* *l.* *n.* *prod.* *recond.* *rec.* *rédi.* *rel.* *reprod.* *séd.* *trad.*

Confire (preserve); *INDICAT. pr.* je confis, tu confis, il confit, nous confisons, vous confisez, ils confisent; *imp.* je confis-ais; *p.d.* je conf-is; *f.* je confir-ai; *c.* je confir-ais;

SUBJ. *pr.* que je confise, que tu confises, qu'il confise, que nous confisions, que vous confisiez, qu'ils confisent; *imp.* que je conf-isse; IMPT. confis, confisons, confisez; *ppr.* confisant; *pp.* confit.

Thus: suffire, by substituting *suf* for *con* of confire; suffire, however, differs from confire in the *pp.* which is **suffi.**

Connaître (know); INDICAT. *pr.* je connais, tu connais, il connaît, nous connaissons, vous connaissez, ils connaissent; *imp.* je connaiss-ais; *p.d.* je conn-us, etc., nous conn-ûmes, etc.; *f.* je connaîtr-ai; *c.* je connaîtr-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je connaisse, que tu connaisses, qu'il connaisse, que nous connaissions, que vous connaissiez, qu'ils connaissent; *imp.* que je conn-usse; IMPT. connais, connaissons, connaissez; *ppr.* connaissant; *pp.* connu.

Thus: méconnaître, reconnaître. Remark that in these three verbs the *i* of the stem takes a circumflex every time it is followed by *t*. Formerly there was before the *t* an *s*, which has been dropped, and this suppression has been marked by an accent.

Conquérir (conquer). See under acquérir.

Contredire (contradict); INDICAT. *pr.* vous contredisez; IMPT. contredisez. With the exception of these two persons this verb is in every other respect conjugated exactly like *dire*, which see.

Thus: se dédire (with être), interdire, médire, prédire, by substituting for *contre*: dé, inter, mé, pré.

Coudre (sew); INDICAT. *pr.* je couds, tu couds, il coud, nous cousons, vous cousez, ils cousent; *imp.* je cous-ais; *p.d.* je cous-is, etc., nous cous-îmes, etc.; *f.* je coudr-ai; *c.* je coudr-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je couse, que tu couses, qu'il couse, que nous cousions, que vous cousiez, qu'ils cousent; *imp.* que je cous-isse; IMPT. couds, cousons, cousez; *ppr.* cousant; *pp.* cousu.

Thus: découdre, recoudre, by putting dé, re, before coudre.

Courir (run); INDICAT. *pr.* je cours, tu cours, il court, nous courons, vous courez, ils courent; *imp.* je cour-ais; *p.d.* je cour-us, etc., nous cour-ûmes, etc.; *f.* je courr-ai; *c.* je courr-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je coure, que tu coures, qu'il coure,

que nous courions, que vous couriez, qu'ils courent; *imp* que je cour-usse; *IMPT.* cours, courons, courez; *ppr.* courant; *pp.* couru.

Thus: accourir, concourir, discourir, encourir, parcourir, recourir, secourir, by placing before *courir*: *ac*, *con*, *dis*, *en*, *par*, *re*, *se*.

N.B.—Accourir takes either *être* or *avoir*.

Couvrir (cover) like *ouvrir* (which see), by putting *c* before it.

Craindre (fear); *INDICAT.* *pr.* je crains, tu crains, il crains, nous craignons, vous craignez, ils craignent; *imp.* je craign-ais; *p.d.* je craign-is, etc., nous craign-îmes, etc.: *f.* je craindr-ai; *c.* je craindr-ais; *SUBJ.* *pr.* que je craigne, que tu craignes, qu'il craigne, que nous craignons, que vous craigniez, qu'ils craignent; *imp.* que je craign-isse; *IMPT.* crains, craignons, craignez; *ppr.* craignant; *pp.* craint.

Thus: contraindre, plaindre, se plaindre (with *être*) by substituting for *cr*: *contr*, *pl*.

Croire (believe); *INDICAT.* *pr.* je crois, tu crois, il croit, nous croyons, vous croyez, ils croient; *imp.* je croy-ais; *p.d.* je cr-us, etc., nous cr-ûmes, etc.; *f.* je croir-ai; *c.* je croir-ais; *SUBJ.* *pr.* que je croie, que tu croies, qu'il croie, que nous croyions, que vous croyiez, qu'ils croient; *imp.* que je cr-usse, que tu cr-usses, qu'il cr-ût, que nous cr-ussions, etc.; *IMPT.* crois, croyons, croyez; *ppr.* croyant; *pp.* cru.

N.B.—Accroire forms its tenses with *faire*, thus: je fais accroire; je faisais accroire; je fis accroire, etc.; décroire is used only in "je ne crois ni ne décrois" I neither believe nor disbelieve.

Croître (grow); *INDICAT.* *pr.* je crois, tu crois, il croît, nous croissons, vous croissez, ils croissent; *imp.* je croiss-ais; *p.d.* je crûs, tu crûs, il crût, nous crûmes, vous crûtes, ils crûrent; *f.* je croîtr-ai; *c.* je croîtr-ais; *SUBJ.* *pr.* que je croisse, que tu croisses, qu'il croisse, que nous croissions, que vous croissiez, qu'ils croissent; *imp.* que je cr-usse; que tu cr-usses, qu'il cr-ût, que nous cr-ussions, etc.; *IMPT.* crois, croissons, croissez; *ppr.* croissant; *pp.* crû (no accent on *crue*, *crus*, or *crues*).

N.B.—1st. there is a circumflex accent on most of the

parts of *croître* which might otherwise be mistaken with those of *croire*; 2nd. there is a circumflex on the *i* of the stem when it is followed by a *t*, as in *connaître*, which see.

Thus: *accroître*, *décroître*; these have a circumflex only on the *i* of the stem before *t*, also one in the *p.d.* first and second person plural, and in the SUBJ. *imp.* third person singular like all other verbs, but nowhere else.

Cueillir (gather); INDICAT. *pr.* je cueille, tu cueilles, il cueille, nous cueillons, vous cueillez, ils cueillent; *imp.* je cueill-ais; *p.d.* je cueill-is, etc., nous cueill-îmes, etc.; *f.* je cueiller-ai; *c.* je cueiller-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je cueille, que tu cueilles, qu'il cueille, que nous cueillions, que vous cueilliez, qu'ils cueillent; *imp.* que je cueill-isse; IMPT. cueille, cueillons, cueillez; *ppr.* cueillant; *pp.* cueilli.

Thus: *accueillir* and *recueillir*, by putting *ac* and *re* before *cueillir*.

Cuire (to cook) like *conduire*, by substituting *c* to *cond.*

Déchoir (fall, sink); INDICAT. *pr.* je déchois, tu déchois, il déchoit, nous déchoyons, vous déchoyez, ils déchoient; *imp.* (none); *p.d.* je déch-us, etc., nous déch-ûmes, etc.; *f.* je décherr-ai; *c.* je décherr-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je déchoie, que tu déchoies, qu'il déchoie, que nous déchoyions, que vous déchoyiez, qu'ils déchoient; *imp.* que je déch-usse; IMPT. (none); *ppr.* (none); *p.p.* déchu.

N.B.—Conjugate this verb with the auxiliary *avoir* when action is expressed, with *être* when state is implied.

Dédire (gainsay), also *se dédire* (retract), the latter conjugated with *être*. See under *contredire*.

Défaillir (decay, faint); INDICAT. *pr.* nous défailions, vous défaillez, ils défont; *imp.* je défail-ais; *p.d.* je défail-is, etc., nous défail-îmes, etc.; *ppr.* défailant; *pp.* défaili. The perfect and the above are the only parts of this verb in frequent use.

Dire (say); INDICAT. *pr.* je dis, tu dis, il dit, nous disons, vous dites, ils disent; *imp.* je dis-ais; *p.d.* je d-is, etc., nous d-îmes; *f.* je dir-ai; *c.* je dir-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je dise, que tu dises, qu'il dise, que nous disions, que vous disiez, qu'ils disent; *imp.* que je d-isse, que tu d-isses, qu'il d-ît, que nous d-issions, etc.; IMPT. dis, disons, dites; *ppr.* disant; *pp.* dit.

Thus: redire, which is the only one conjugated *exactly* like dire. For the other verbs in 'dire,' see contredire and maudire.

Dormir (sleep); INDICAT. *pr.* je dors, tu dors, il dort, nous dormons; vous dormez, ils dorment; *imp.* je dorm-ais; *p.d.* je dorm-is, etc., nous dorm-îmes, etc.; *f.* je dormir-ai; *c.* je dormir-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je dorme, que tu dormes, qu'il dorme, que nous dormions, que vous dormiez, qu'ils dorment; *imp.* que je dorm-isse; IMPT. dors, dormons, dormez; *p.pr.* dormant; *pp.* dormi.

Thus: endormir, s'endormir (auxiliary *être*), rendormir, by putting before dormir: en ren.

Échoir (lapse, become due) takes the auxiliary *être*; INDICAT. *pr.* il échoit (also échet), ils échoient (also échéent); *p.d.* il échut, ils échurent; *f.* il écherra (also échoira), ils écherront; *c.* il écherrait (also échoirait); SUBJ. *pr.* qu'il échoie, qu'ils échoient; *imp.* qu'il échût, qu'ils échussent; *p.pr.* échéant; *pp.* échu. The compound tenses and the above are the only parts of this verb used.

Éclore (be hatched) takes the auxiliary *être*; INDICAT. *pr.* il éclôt, ils éclosent; *f.* il éclora, ils écloront; *c.* il éclorait, ils écloraient; SUBJ. *pr.* qu'il éclore; *pp.* éclos, éclose. The compound tenses and the above are the only parts of this verb used.

Écrire (write); INDICAT. *pr.* j'écris, tu écris, il écrit, nous écrivons, vous écrivez, ils écrivent; *imp.* j'écriv-ais; *p.d.* j'écriv-is, etc., nous écriv-îmes, etc.; *f.* j'écriv-ai; *c.* j'écriv-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que j'écrive, que tu écrives, qu'il écrive, que nous écrivions, que vous écriviez, qu'ils écrivent; *imp.* que j'écriv-isse; IMPT. écris, écrivons, écrivez; *p.pr.* écrivant; *pp.* écrit.

Thus: circonscrire, décrire, inscrire, prescrire, proscrire, récrire, souscrire, transcrire, by substituting for *é*: circons, dé, ins, pres, pros, ré, sous, trans.

Envoyer (send); INDICAT. *pr.* j'envoie, tu envoies, il envoie, nous envoyons, vous envoyez, ils envoient; *imp.* j'envoy-ais; *p.d.* j'envoy-ai; *f.* j'enverrai; *c.* j'enverrais; SUBJ. *pr.* que j'envoie; *imp.* que j'envoy-asse; IMPT. envoie, envoyons, envoyez; *p.pr.* envoyant; *pp.* envoyé. This verb

is perfectly regular, except in the future and conditional. Like all verbs in *oyer* it changes the *y* into *i* before an *e* mute.

Faillir (fail); INDICAT. *pr.* je faux, tu faux, il faut, nous faillons, vous faillez, ils faillent; *imp.* je faill-ais; *p.d.* je faill-is, etc., nous faill-îmes, etc.; *f.* je faudr-ai; *c.* je foudrais; *ppr.* faillant; *pp.* failli. The compound tenses and the above are the only parts of this verb in frequent use.

Faire (make); INDICAT. *pr.* je fais, tu fais, il fait, nous faisons, vous faites, ils font; *imp.* je fais-ais; *p.d.* je f-is, etc., nous f-îmes, etc.; *f.* je fer-ai; *c.* je fer-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je fasse, que tu fasses, qu'il fasse, que nous fassions, que vous fassiez, qu'ils fassent; *imp.* que je f-isse, que tu f-isses, qu'il f-ît, que nous f-issions, etc.; IMPT. fais, faisons, faites; *ppr.* faisant; *pp.* fait.

Thus: contrefaire, défaire, forfaire, refaire, satisfaire, surfaire, by putting before faire: contre, dé, for, re, satis, sur.

Falloir (must); INDICAT. *pr.* il faut; *imp.* il fallait; *p.d.* il fallut; *f.* il faudra; *c.* il faudrait; SUBJ. *pr.* qu'il faille; *imp.* qu'il fallut; IMPT. (none); *ppr.* (none); *pp.* fallu. This is an impersonal verb.

Thus: s'en falloir, conjugated with *être*; 's'en' comes after 'il' all through the simple and compound tenses.

Férir (strike), used only in the infinitive, in the expression 'sans coup férir,' without striking a blow.

Fleurir is regular (like punir) when taken in its literal sense to flower, to bloom; when used metaphorically, for to prosper, it differs from punir as follows: *imp.* je floriss-ais, etc.; *ppr.* florissant.

Frîre (fry); INDICAT. *pr.* je fris, tu fris, il frit; *f.* je frir-ai; *c.* je frir-ais; IMPT. fris; *pp.* frit. This verb has only the compound tenses and the parts given above.

Fuir (flee); INDICAT. *pr.* je fuis, tu fuis, il fuit, nous fuyons, vous fuyez, ils fuient; *imp.* je fuy-ais; *p.d.* je fu-is, etc., nous fu-îmes, etc.; *f.* je fuir-ai; *c.* je fuir-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je fuie, que je fuies, qu'il fuie, que nous fuyions, que vous fuyiez, qu'ils fuient; *imp.* que je fu-isse, que tu

fu-isses, qu'il fu-ît, que nous fu-issions, etc.; IMPT. fuis, fuyons, fuyez; *ppr.* fuyant; *pp.* fui. Remark that the stem has *i* before a consonant, and before an *e* mute, and *y* everywhere else.

Thus: s'enfuir, conjugated with *être*.

Gésir (lie); INDICAT. *pr.* il gît, nous gisons, vous gisez, ils gisent; *imp.* je gis-ais; *ppr.* gisant. These are the only parts of the verb used; the infinitive is obsolete.

Haïr (hate), the verb ha-ïr is conjugated like pu-nir, with this slight difference that it takes a diæresis on the *i* all through, except in the singular of *indicat. pr.* je hais, tu hais, il hait, and consequently in the second person singular of the IMPT. hais.

Inclure (include, enclose); this verb is very seldom used except in the *pp.* inclus. Thus we have perclus (from obsolete perclure), reclus, from reclure.

Interdire (forbid). See under contredire.

Issir (spring from), obsolete; the only part now used is the *pp.* issu; compound tenses with *être*.

Joindre (join); INDICAT. *pr.* je joins, tu joins, il joint, nous joignons, vous joignez, ils joignent; *imp.* je joign-ais *p.d.* je joign-is, etc., nous joign-imes, etc.; *f.* je joindr-ai *c.* je joindr-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je joigne, que tu joignes, qu'il joigne, que nous joignons, que vous joigniez, qu'ils joignent; *imp.* que je joign-isse; IMPT. joins, joignons, joignez; *ppr.* joignant; *pp.* joint.

Thus: conjoindre, déjoindre, disjoindre, rejoindre by putting before joindre: con, dé, dis, re.

Lire (read); INDICAT. *pr.* je lis, tu lis, il lit, nous lisons, vous lisez, ils lisent; *imp.* je lis-ais; *p.d.* je l-us, etc., nous l-ûmes, etc.; *f.* je lir-ai; *c.* je lir-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je lise, que tu lises, qu'il lise, que nous lisions, que vous lisiez, qu'ils lisent; *imp.* que je l-usse, que tu l-usses, qu'il l-ût, que nous l-ussions, etc.; IMPT. lis, lisons, lisez; *ppr.* lisant; *pp.* lu.

Thus: élire, relire, réélire, by putting before lire: é, re, réé.

Luire (shine), like conduire, by substituting *l* for *cond*,

with the exception of the *pp.* which is **lui**, and of the *p.d.* and SUBJ. *imp.* which are wanting.

Thus: reluire, by putting *re* before *luire*.

Maudire (curse), like *pun-ir*, except in the *pp.* which is **maudit**.

Médire (slander). *See* under *contredire*.

Mettre (put); INDICAT. *pr.* je mets, tu mets, il met, nous mettons, vous mettez, ils mettent; *imp.* je mett-ais; *p.d.* je m-is, etc., nous m-îmes, etc.; *f.* je mettr-ai; *c.* je mettr-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je mette, que tu mettes, qu'il mette, que nous mettions, que vous mettiez, qu'ils mettent; *imp.* que je m-isse, que tu m-isses, qu'il m-ît, que nous m-issions etc.; IMPT. mets, mettons, mettez; *ppr.* mettant; *pp.* mis.

Thus: admettre, commettre, compromettre, démettre, émettre, s'entremettre (with *être*), omettre, permettre, promettre, remettre, soumettre, transmettre, by putting before *mettre*: *ad*, *com*, *compro*, *dé*, *é*, *entre*, *o*, *per*, *pro*, *re*, *sou*, *trans*.

Moudre (grind corn, etc.); INDICAT. *pr.* je mouds, tu mouds, il moud, nous moulons, vous moulez, ils moulent; *imp.* je moul-ais; *p.d.* je moul-us, etc., nous moul-ûmes, etc.; *f.* je moudr-ai; *c.* je moudr-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je moule, que tu moules, qu'il moule, que nous moulions, que vous mouliez, qu'ils moulent; *imp.* que je moul-usse; IMPT. mouds, moulons, moulez; *ppr.* moulant; *pp.* moulu.

Thus: émoudre, remoudre, rémoudre, by putting before *moudre*: *é*, *re*, *ré*.

Mourir (die); auxiliary *être*; INDICAT. *pr.* je meurs, tu meurs, il meurt, nous mourons, vous mourez, ils meurent; *imp.* je mour-ais; *p.d.* je mour-us, etc., nous mour-ûmes, etc.; *f.* je mourr-ai; *c.* je mourr-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je meure, que tu meures, qu'il meure, que nous mourions, que vous mouriez, qu'ils meurent; *imp.* que je mourusse; IMPT. meurs, mourons, mourez; *ppr.* mourant; *pp.* mort.

Mouvoir (move); INDICAT. *pr.* je meus, tu meus, il meut, nous mouvons, vous mouvez, ils meuvent; *imp.* je mouv-ais; *p.d.* je m-us, etc., nous m-ûmes, etc.; *f.* je mouv-ai; *c.* je mouv-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je meuve, que tu

meuves, qu'il meuve; que nous mouvions, que vous mouviez, qu'ils meuvent; *imp.* que je m-usse, que tu m-usses, qu'il m-ût, que nous m-ussions, etc.; *IMPT.* meus, mouvons, mouvez; *ppr.* mouvant; *pp.* mû. The masculine singular alone takes the circumflex.

Thus: é mouvoir, s'é mouvoir (auxiliary être), with the exception that they do not take the circumflex on the *pp.*

Naître (be born); auxiliary être; *INDICAT. pr.* je nais, tu nais, il naît, nous naissons, vous naissez, ils naissent; *imp.* je naiss-ais; *p.d.* je naqu-is; *f.* naîtr-ai; *c.* je naîtra-ais; *SUBJ. pr.* que je naisse, que tu naisses, qu'il naisse, que nous naissions, que vous naissiez, qu'ils naissent; *imp.* que je naqu-isse: *IMPT.* nais, naissons, *naïssez*; *ppr.* naissant; *pp.* né. This verb has a circumflex on the *i* when that letter is followed by *t* (see connaître).

Thus: renaître, with this exception that it has no *pp.*, and consequently no compound tenses.

Nuire (hurt); like conduire, by substituting *n* for *cond*, excepting the *pp.*, where nuire makes *nui*.

Thus: s'entre-nuire, auxiliary être.

Offrir (offer); *INDICAT. pr.* j'offre, tu offres, il offre, nous offrons, vous offrez, ils offrent; *imp.* j'offr-ais; *p.d.* j'offr-is, etc., nous offr-îmes, etc.; *f.* j'offrir-ai; *c.* j'offrir-ais; *SUBJ. pr.* que j'offre, que tu offres, qu'il offre, que nous offrions, que vous offriez, qu'ils offrent; *imp.* que j'offr-isse, que tu offr-isses, qu'il offr-ît, que nous offr-issions, etc.; *IMPT.* offre, offrons, offrez; *ppr.* offrant; *pp.* offert.

Thus: souffrir, by changing *o* into *ou*.

Oindre (anoint); *INDICAT. pr.* j'oins, tu oins, il oint, nous oignons, vous oignez, ils oignent; *imp.* j'oign-ais; *p.d.* j'oign-is; *f.* j'oindr-ai; *SUBJ. pr.* que j'oign-e; *imp.* que j'oign-isse; *ppr.* oignant; *pp.* oint. This verb is seldom used, and only in the parts given above.

Oùir (hear); the *pp.* ouï, and the compound tenses are the only parts used besides the infinitive.

Ouvrir (open); *INDICAT. pr.* j'ouvre, tu ouvres, il ouvre, nous ouvrons, vous ouvrez, ils ouvrent; *imp.* j'ouvr-ais; *p.d.* j'ouvr-is, etc., nous ouvr-îmes, etc. *f.* j'ouvrir-ai; *c.* j'ouvrir-ais; *SUBJ. pr.* que j'ouvre, que tu ouvres, qu'il ouvre, que nous ouvririons, que vous ouvriez, qu'ils ouvrent;

imp. que j'ouvr-isse, que tu ouvr-isses, qu'il ouvr-ît, que nous ouvr-issions, etc. ; *IMPT.* ouvre, ouvrons, ouvrez ; *ppr.* ouvrant ; *pp.* ouvert.

Thus : couvrir, découvrir, entr'ouvrir, recouvrir, rouvrir, by putting before ouvrir : c, déc, entre', rec, r.

Pâître (graze) ; *INDICAT. pr.* je pais, tu pais, il pâit, nous paissions, vous paisez, ils paissent ; *imp.* je paiss-ais ; *f.* je pâitr-ai ; *c.* je pâitr-ais ; *SUBJ. pr.* que je paiss-e ; *IMPT.* paisez ; *ppr.* paissant ; *pp.* (pu, obsolete). No compound tenses, only the parts given above are used.

Thus : repâître, which has besides a *p.d.* rep-us ; a perfect, j'ai repu ; and a *pp.* repu ; also se repâître, with *être* instead of avoir.

Paraître (appear) ; *INDICAT. pr.* je parais, tu parais, il paraît, nous paraissions, vous paraissez, ils paraissent ; *imp.* je paraiss-ais ; *p.d.* je par-us, etc., nous par-ûmes ; *f.* je paraîtr-ai ; *c.* je paraîtr-ais ; *SUBJ. pr.* que je paraisse, que tu paraisses, qu'il paraisse, que nous paraissions, que vous paraissiez, qu'ils paraissent ; *imp.* que je par-usse, que tu par-usses, qu'il par-ût, que nous par-ussions, etc. ; *IMPT.* parais, paraissions, paraissez ; *ppr.* paraissant ; *pp.* paru.

Thus : apparaître (*être* or *avoir*), disparaître (*être* or *avoir*), comparaître, reparaître, by putting before paraître : ap, dis, com, re.

Partir (depart), auxiliary *être* ; *INDICAT. pr.* je pars, tu pars, il part, nous partons, vous partez, ils partent ; *imp.* je part-ais ; *p.d.* je part-is, etc. ; nous part-îmes, etc. ; *f.* je partir-ai ; *c.* je partir-ais ; *SUBJ. pr.* que je parte, que tu partes, qu'il parte, que nous partions, que vous partiez, qu'ils partent ; *imp.* que je part-isse, que tu part-isses, qu'il part-ît, que nous part-issions, etc. ; *IMPT.* pars, partons, partez ; *ppr.* partant ; *pp.* parti.

Thus : repartir (to set out again, with *être*), repartir (to reply, with *avoir*), se départir (with *être*), départir (with *avoir*), by putting before partir : re, dé.

N.B.—'Répartir,' to divide, is regular, and conjugated throughout like *punir*.

Peindre (paint) ; *INDICAT. pr.* je peins, tu peins, il peint, nous peignons, vous peignez, ils peignent ; *imp.* je peign-ais ;

p.d. je peign-is, etc., nous peign-îmes, etc. ; *f.* je peindr-ai ; *c.* je peindr-ais ; SUBJ. *pr.* que je peigne, que tu peignes, qu'il peigne, que nous peignons, que vous peigniez, qu'ils peignent ; *imp.* que je peign-isse ; IMPT. peins, peignons, peignez ; *ppr.* peignant ; *pp.* peint.

Thus : atteindre, astreindre, ceindre, dépeindre, déteindre, empreindre, enfreindre, éteindre, feindre, geindre, restreindre, teindre, by substituting for the *p.* of peindre : att, astr, c, dép, dét, empr. enfr, f, g, restr, t.

Plaindre (pity). See under craindre.

Plaire (please) ; INDICAT. *pr.* je plais, tu plais, il plaît, nous plaisons, vous plaisez, ils plaisent ; *imp.* je plais-ais ; *p.d.* je pl-us, etc., nous pl-ûmes, etc. ; *f.* je plair-ai ; *c.* je plair-ais ; SUBJ. *pr.* que je plaise, que tu plaises, qu'il plaise, que nous plaisions, que vous plaissiez, qu'ils plaisent ; *imp.* que je pl-usse, que tu pl-usses, qu'il plût, que nous pl-ussions, etc. ; IMPT. plais, plaisons, plaisez ; *ppr.* plaissant ; *pp.* plu.

Thus : complaire, se complaire (with *être*), déplaire, by putting *com* and *dé* before plaire ; also taire, se taire (with *être*), by substituting *t* for the *p* of plaire.

Pleuvoir (rain) ; INDICAT. *pr.* il pleut ; *imp.* il pleuvait ; *p.d.* il plut ; *f.* il pleuvra ; *c.* il pleuvrait ; SUBJ. *pr.* qu'il pleuve ; *imp.* qu'il plût ; *ppr.* pleuvant ; *pp.* plu. These are the only parts of the verb used.

Pourvoir (provide) ; *p.d.* je pourv-us ; *f.* je pourvoir-ai ; *c.* je pourvoir-ais ; SUBJ. *imp.* que je pourv-usse ; for all the other parts conjugate like voir (which see) by putting *pour* before voir.

Pouvoir (to be able) ; INDICAT. *pr.* je peux or je puis, tu peux, il peut, nous pouvons, vous pouvez, ils peuvent ; *imp.* je pouv-ais ; *p.d.* je p-us, etc., nous p-ûmes etc. ; *f.* je pourr-ai ; *c.* je pourr-ais ; SUBJ. *pr.* que je puisse, que tu puisses, qu'il puisse, que nous puissions, que vous puissiez, qu'ils puissent ; *imp.* que je p-usse, que tu p-usses, qu'il p-ût ; que nous p-ussions, etc. ; IMPT. (none) ; *ppr.* pouvant ; *pp.* pu.

Prédire (to predict) ; see under contredire.

Prendre (take) ; INDICAT. *pr.* je prends, tu prends, il prend, nous prenons, vous prenez, ils prennent ; *imp.* je

pren-ais; *p.d.* je pr-is, etc., nous pr-îmes, etc.; *f.* je prendrai; *c.* je prendr-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je prenne, que tu prennes, qu'il prenne, que nous prenions, que vous preniez, qu'ils prennent; *imp.* que je pr-isse, que tu pr-isses, qu'il prît, que nous pr-issions, etc.; IMPR. prends, prenons, prenez; *ppr.* prenant; *pp.* pris.

Thus: apprendre, comprendre, désapprendre, entreprendre, se méprendre (with *être*), rapprendre, reprendre, surprendre, by putting before prendre: ap, com, désap, entre, mé, rap, re, sur.

Prévaloir (prevail); SUBJ. *pr.* que je prévale, que tu prévalues, qu'il prévale, que nous prévalions, que vous prévaliez, qu'ils prévalent; in every other respect like valoir (which see) by putting *pré* before valoir.

Thus: se prévaloir (with *être*).

Prévoir (foresee); *f.* je prévoir-ai, *c.* je prévoir-ais; conjugate all the other parts like voir (which see) by putting *pré* before voir.

Résoudre (resolve); *pp.* résolu; the other form of the *pp.* résous, has no feminine; it expresses change, and is used in such expressions as "brouillard résous en pluie," mist resolved (changed) into rain; all the other parts of résoudre are conjugated like absoudre by substituting *ré* for *ab*.

Rire (laugh); INDICAT. *pr.* je ris, tu ris, il rit, nous rions, vous riez, ils rient; *imp.* je ri-ais; *p.d.* je r-is, etc., nous r-îmes, etc.; *f.* je rir-ai; *c.* je rir-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je rie, que tu ries, qu'il rie, que nous riions, que vous riiez, qu'ils rient; *imp.* que je r-isse (but little used); IMPR. ris, rions, riez; *ppr.* riant; *pp.* ri.

Thus: sourire by putting *sou* before rire.

Saillir (protrude); INDICAT. *pr.* il saille, ils saillent; *imp.* il saillait, ils saillaient; *p.d.* il saillit, ils saillirent; *f.* il saillera, ils sailleront; *c.* il saillerait, ils sailleraient; SUBJ. *pr.* qu'il saille, qu'ils saillent; *imp.* qu'il saillît, qu'ils saillissent; *ppr.* saillant; *pp.* sailli. This verb has only the third person singular and plural.

Savoir (know); INDICAT. *pr.* je sais, tu sais, il sait, nous savons, vous savez, ils savent; *imp.* je sav-ais; *p.d.* je

s-us, etc., nous s-ûmes, etc. ; *f.* je saur-ai ; *c.* je saur-ais ; SUBJ. *pr.* que je sache, que tu saches, qu'il sache, que nous sachions, que vous sachiez, qu'ils sachent ; *imp.* que je s-usse, que tu s-usses, qu'il s-ût, que nous s-ussions, etc. ; IMPT. sache, sachons, sachez ; *ppr.* sachant ; *pp.* su.

Sentir (smell, feel) ; INDICAT. *pr.* je sens, tu sens, il sent, nous sentons, vous sentez, ils sentent ; *imp.* je sent-ais ; *p.d.* je sent-is, etc., nous sent-îmes, etc. ; *f.* je sentir-ai ; *c.* je sentir-ais ; SUBJ. *pr.* que je sente, que tu sentes, qu'il sente, que nous sentions, que vous sentiez, qu'ils sentent ; *imp.* que je sent-isse, que tu sent-isses, qu'il sent-ît, que nous sent-issions, etc. ; IMPT. sens, sentons, sentez ; *ppr.* sentant ; *pp.* senti.

Thus : consentir, pressentir, ressentir, by putting before sentir : con, pres, res ; also démentir, mentir, se repentir (with *être*), by substituting for the *s* of sentir, dém, m, rep.

Seoir (to suit) ; INDICAT. *pr.* il sied, ils siéent ; *imp.* il seyait, ils seyaient ; *f.* il siéra, ils siéront ; *c.* il siérait, ils siéraient ; SUBJ. *pr.* qu'il siée, qu'ils siéent ; *ppr.* seyant or séant ; it has no compound tenses ; the word *sis* is only used as an adjective in the sense of 'situated.'

Thus : messeoir by putting *mes* before seoir.

Servir (serve) ; INDICAT. *pr.* je sers, tu sers, il sert, nous servons, vous servez, ils servent ; *imp.* je serv-ais ; *p.d.* je serv-is, etc., nous serv-îmes, etc. ; *f.* je servir-ai ; *c.* je servir-ais ; SUBJ. *pr.* que je serve, que tu serves, qu'il serve, que nous servions, que vous serviez, qu'ils servent ; *imp.* que je serv-isse ; IMPT. sers, servons, servez ; *ppr.* servant ; *pp.* servi.

Thus : desservir, by putting *des* before servir.

Sortir (to go out), with *être* ; INDICAT. *pr.* je sors, tu sors, il sort, nous sortons, vous sortez, ils sortent ; *imp.* je sort-ais ; *p.d.* je sort-is, etc., nous sort-îmes, etc. ; *f.* je sortir-ai ; *c.* je sortir-ais ; SUBJ. *pr.* que je sorte, que tu sortes, qu'il sorte, que nous sortions, que vous sortiez, qu'ils sortent ; *imp.* que je sort-isse ; IMPT. sors, sortons, sortez ; *ppr.* sortant ; *pp.* sorti.

Thus : ressortir (with *être*), by putting *res* before sortir.

Souffrir (suffer). See under offrir.

Suffire (suffice); *pp.* suffi. Conjugate all the other parts like *confire*, which see.

Suivre (follow); INDICAT. *pr.* je suis, tu suis, il suit, nous suivons, vous suivez, ils suivent; *imp.* je suiv-ais; *p.d.* je suiv-is. etc., nous suiv-îmes, etc.; *f.* je suivr-ai; *c.* je suivr-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je suive, que tu suives, qu'il suive, que nous suivions, que vous suiviez, qu'ils suivent; *imp.* que je suiv-isse; IMPT. suis, suivons, suivez; *ppr.* suivant, *pp.* suivi.

Thus: poursuivre, s'ensuivre (with *être*), by putting before *suivre*: pour, en.

N.B.—S'ensuivre is used only in the third person singular and plural of each tense.

Taire (keep silent). See under *plaire*.

Tenir (hold); INDICAT. *pr.* je tiens, tu tiens, il tient, nous tenons, vous tenez, ils tiennent; *imp.* je ten-ais; *p.d.* je tins, tu tins, il tint, nous tîmes, vous tîmes, ils tinrent; *f.* je tiendr-ai; *c.* je tiendr-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je tienn, que tu tiennes, qu'il tienn, que nous tenions, que vous teniez, qu'ils tiennent; *imp.* que je tinsse, que tu tinsses, qu'il tînt, que nous tinssions, que vous tinssiez, qu'ils tinssent; IMPT. tiens, tenons, tenez; *ppr.* tenant; *pp.* tenu.—This verb is conjugated like *venir*, by substituting *t* for *v*.

Thus: appartenir, contenir, détenir, entretenir, maintenir, obtenir, retenir, soutenir, s'abstenir (with *être*), by putting before *tenir*: appar, con, dé, entre, main, ob, re, sou, *abs.*

Traire (milk); INDICAT. *pr.* je traie, tu traie, il traite, nous trayons, vous trayez, ils traitent; *imp.* je tray-ais; *p.d.* (none); *f.* je trair-ai; *c.* je trair-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je traie, que tu traies, qu'il traie, que nous trayions, que vous trayiez, qu'ils traitent; *imp.* (none); IMPT. traie, trayons, trayez; *ppr.* trayant; *pp.* trait.

Thus: abstraire, distraire, extraire, rentraire, soustraire, by putting before *traire*: abs, dis, ex, ren, sous; also *braire* by substituting *b* for the *t* of *traire*; the following parts alone of *braire* are commonly used: the infinitive and the third person singular and plural of the indicative present, future, and conditional.

Vaincre (conquer); INDICAT. *pr.* je vains, tu vains, il

vainc, nous vainquons, vous vainquez, ils vainquent; *imp.* je vainqu-ais; *p.d.* je vainqu-is, etc., nous vainqu-îmes, etc.; *f.* je vaincr-ai; *c.* je vaincr-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je vainque; que tu vainques, qu'il vainque, que nous vainquions, que vous vainquiez, qu'ils vainquent; *imp.* que je vainquisse; IMPT. vains, vainquons, vainquez; *p.pr.* vainquant; *p.p.* vaincu. Remark that the letter *c* becomes *qu* before *a, e, i, o.*

Thus: convaincre by putting *con* before vaincre.

Valoir (be worth); INDICAT. *pr.* je vaux, tu vaux, il vaut, nous valons, vous valez, ils valent; *imp.* je val-ais; *p.d.* je val-us, etc., nous val-ûmes; *f.* je vaudr-ai; *c.* je vaudr-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je vaille, que tu vailles, qu'il vaille, que nous valions, que vous valiez, qu'ils valient; *imp.* que je val-usse, que tu val-usses, qu'il val-ût, que nous val-ussions, etc.; IMPT. vaux, valons, valez; *p.pr.* valant; *p.p.* valu.

Thus: équivaloir, revaloir by putting *équi, re,* before valoir; also prévaloir, with the exception of the SUBJ. *pr.* See prévaloir in its alphabetical order.

Venir (come), with *être*; INDICAT. *pr.* je viens, tu viens, il vient, nous venons, vous venez, ils viennent; *imp.* je ven-ais; *p.d.* je vins, tu vins, il vint, nous vîmes, vous vîntes, ils vinrent; *f.* je viendr-ai; *c.* je viendr-ais, SUBJ. *pr.* que je vienne, que tu viennes, qu'il vienne; que nous venions, que vous veniez, qu'ils viennent; *imp.* que je vinsse, que tu vinsses, qu'il vînt, que nous vinssions, que vous vinssiez, qu'ils vinssent; IMPT. viens, venons, venez; *p.pr.* venant; *p.p.* venu.

Thus: with the auxiliary *être*: devenir, disconvenir, intervenir, parvenir, revenir, redevenir, se ressouvenir, se souvenir, survenir; with *avoir* or *être*, convenir; with *avoir* only, circonvénir, prévenir, subvenir. Put before venir: *de, discon, inter, par, re, rede, ressou, sou, sur, con, circon, pré, sub.*

Vêtir (clothe); INDICAT. *pr.* je vêts, tu vêts, il vêt, nous vêtons, vous vêtez, ils vêtent; *imp.* je vêt-ais; *p.d.* je vêt-is, etc., nous vêt-îmes, etc.; *f.* je vêtir-ai; *c.* je vêtir-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je vête, que tu vêtes, qu'il vête, que nous vêtions, que vous vétiez, qu'ils vêtent; *imp.* que je vêt-isse; IMPT. vêts, vêtons, vêtez; *p.pr.* vêtant; *p.p.* vêtu.

Thus : dévêtir, revêtir by putting before vêtir : dé, re.

N.B.—Vêtir, dévêtir, and revêtir are chiefly used with the reflexive pronoun, and, of course, in that case take *être*.

Vivre (live); INDICAT. *pr.* je vis, tu vis, il vit, nous vivons, vous vivez, ils vivent; *imp.* je viv-ais; *p.d.* je véc-us, etc., nous vec-ûmes, etc.; *f.* je vivr-ai; *c.* je vivr-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je vive, que tu vives, qu'il vive, que nous vivions, que vous viviez, qu'ils vivent; *imp.* que je véc-usse, que tu véc-usses, qu'il véc-ût, que nous véc-ussions, etc.; IMPT. vis, vivons, vivez; *p.pr.* vivant; *pp.* vécu.

Thus : revivre, survivre by putting before vivre : re, sur.

Voir (see); INDICAT. *pr.* je vois, tu vois, il voit, nous voyons, vous voyez, ils voient; *imp.* je voy-ais; *p.d.* je vis, tu vis, il vit, nous vîmes, vous vîtes, ils virent; *f.* je verr-ai; *c.* je verr-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je voie, que tu voies, qu'il voie, que nous voyions, que vous voyiez, qu'ils voient; *imp.* que je visse, que tu visses, qu'il vît, que nous vissions, que vous vissiez, qu'ils vissent; IMPT. vois, voyons, voyez; *p.pr.* voyant; *pp.* vu.

Thus : revoir, entrevoir by putting before voir : re, entre.

Vouloir (wish); INDICAT. *pr.* je veux, tu veux, il veut, nous voulons, vous voulez, ils veulent; *imp.* je voul-ais; *p.d.* je voul-us, etc., nous voul-ûmes, etc.; *f.* je voudr-ai; *c.* je voudr-ais; SUBJ. *pr.* que je veuille, que tu veuilles, qu'il veuille, que nous voulions, que vous vouliez, qu'ils veuillent; *imp.* que je voul-usse; IMPT. veux, voulons, voulez (*see* note); *p.pr.* voulant; *pp.* voulu.

NOTE.—There is another form of the IMPT. *veuille, veuil-lons, veuillez*; this last word, *veuillez*, is frequently used in the sense of : "have the kindness to."

SYNOPSIS

OF THE

GRAMMATICAL RULES

Contained in the FIRST FRENCH BOOK, with which the Learner is supposed to have made himself already familiar.

1. The alphabet: a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, j, k, l, m, n, o, p, q, r, s, t, u, v, w, x, y, z.—*Names of the letters:* a, bc, cé, dé, é, effe, gé, ache, i, ji, ka, elle, emme, enne, o, pé, qu, erre, esse, té, u, vé, double vé, ikse, i grec, zède.

2. Accents: The acute (é), the grave (à), the circumflex (â).

3. The cedilla (ç), placed under c, gives it the sound of s before a, o, u.

4. The apostrophe (') indicates the suppression of a letter.

5. The diæresis (") means that the vowel above which it is placed must be pronounced quite distinct from the preceding vowel.

6. The definite article: Before a consonant or an h aspirate, *le* (m.), *la* (f.); before a vowel or h mute, *l'* (m. and f.); before any plural noun, *les*.

7. In combination with à and de: Before a consonant or h aspirate, *au*, *du* (m.), *à la*, *de la* (f.); before a vowel or h mute, *à l'*, *de l'*, (m. and f.); before any plural noun, *aux*, *des*.

N.B.—The article, with or without a reposition, must be repeated before every noun.

8. Some or any, expressed or understood, is translated by **du, de la, de l', des**; **de, d'** alone is used after a negative, *il n'a pas de livres*, and before an adjective, *il a de bons livres*.

9. The indefinite article : *un* (m.), *une* (f.), no plural (as an article).

10. The possessive case : for 'my brother's pen' say 'the pen of my brother,' *la plume de mon frère*; 'this book is Charles's,' or 'belongs to Charles,' *ce livre est à Charles*; 'this book is the master's,' or 'belongs to the master,' *ce livre est au maître*.

11. Nouns : To form the plural add **s** to the singular.

12. If the singular ends in *s, x, or z*, there will be no change in the plural.

13. If the singular ends in *au* or *eu*, add **x** for the plural.

14. The following in *ou* take **x** : *bijou, caillou, chou, genou, hibou, joujou, pou*. They are all masc.

15. If the singular ends in *al*, change the *al* into **aux** for the plural.

16. The following change *ail* into **aux** : *bail, corail, émail, soupirail, travail, vantail, vitrail*. All are masc.

17. Nouns with two plural forms : *aïeul* (s.), *aïeuls* (pl.), grandfathers; *aïeux* (pl.), ancestors;—*ciel* (s.), *cieux* (pl.), heavens; *ciels* (pl.), bed-testers, skies in pictures;—*œil* (s.), *yeux* (pl.), eyes; *œils* in *œils-de-bœuf*, oval windows;—*travail* (s.), *travaux* (pl.), works; *travails*, reports (of a minister).

18. *Bétail* (s.) and *bestiaux* (pl.) both mean 'cattle.'

19. Qualifying adjectives : They agree in gender and number with the noun.

20. To form the feminine, add **e** mute to the masculine.

21. If the masculine ends in *e* mute, the adjective does not change in the feminine.

22. Adjectives in *el, eil, en, on, et, ot, s*, double the last consonant, and add an **e** mute.

23. The following have two forms for the masculine ;

the one used before a consonant or an *h* aspirate : *beau, nouveau, vieux, fou, mou* ; the other used before a vowel or *h* mute : *bel, nouvel, vieil, fol, mol*. They form their feminine from the latter : *belle, nouvelle, vieille, folle, molle*.

N.B.—*Jumeau*, twin, makes *jumelle* in the feminine.

24. Adjectives in *er, ier*, and the following in *et*, add an *e* mute, and take a grave accent on the *e* preceding the consonant : *complet, concret, discret, inquiet, replet, secret*.

25. Adjectives in *f* change *f* into *ve*.

26. Those in *x* change *x* into *se*.

27. Those in *eur* change *eur* into *euse*.

28. The following in *eur* take *e* mute : *meilleur, majeur, mineur, supérieur, inférieur, intérieur, extérieur, antérieur, postérieur*.

29. The following change *teur* into *trice* : *accusateur, protecteur, acteur*.

30. The following change *eur* into *eresse* : *vengeur, enchanteur*.

31. The following form their feminine irregularly : *faux, fausse* ; *roux, rousse* ; *doux, douce* ; *blanc, blanche* ; *franc, franche* ; *sec, sèche* ; *frais, fraîche* ; *caduc, caduque* ; *public, publique* ; *turc, turque* ; *grec, grecque* ; *long, longue* ; *bénin, bénigne* ; *malin, maligne* ; *favori, favorite* ; *coi, coite*.

32. The plural in qualifying adjectives : To form the plural add an *s* to the singular.

N.B.—If the singular ends in *s* or *x*, no change takes place.

33. If the singular ends in *eau*, add *x* in the plural.

34. The following change *al* into *aux* : *égal, légal, royal, loyal, cardinal, général, moral, spécial, féodal, baptismal, sacerdotal, principal*.

35. Position of adjectives : Adjectives generally come after the noun with which they agree ; past participles used as adjectives, always come after it. The following adjectives usually precede the noun : *beau, joli, bon, meilleur, grand, petit, mauvais, vilain, gros, vieux*.

36. Degrees of comparison : To form the comparative of superiority put **plus**, more, before the positive, and **que**, than, after it.

37. To form the comparative of inferiority put **moins** less, before the positive, and **que**, than, after it.

38. To form the comparative of equality put **aussi**, as, before the positive, and translate the last 'as' by **que**.

39. To form the superlative *relative* put the definite article before the *comparative*.

40. To form the superlative *absolute* put **très** or **fort**, very, **extrêmement**, extremely, etc., before the *positive*.

41. Bon, good, forms its degrees of comparison irregularly : *bon, meilleur, le meilleur* ; **petit**, little, and **mauvais**, bad, form their degrees of comparison regularly, and also irregularly, as follows : *petit, moindre, le moindre* ; *mauvais, pire, le pire*.

42. When 'little,' 'better,' 'best,' 'worse,' 'worst' are adverbs in English, they are translated into French by *peu, mieux, le mieux, pis, le pis*.

43. Either **très** or **beaucoup** will translate 'very much,' but *très beaucoup* is not French.

44. In speaking of health, the adverb, **not the adjective**, is used in French : *il est mieux*, he is better (in health) ; *il est meilleur*, he is a better boy, or, a better man.

45. Remark : the largest book, *le plus grand livre* ; my largest book, *mon plus grand livre* (not *mon le plus grand*).

46. Possessive adjectives : *mon, ton, son* ; *ma, ta, sa* ; *mes, tes, ses* : for one possessor only. *Notre, votre, leur, nos, vos, leurs* : for more than one possessor. The possessive adjectives in French agree in **person** with the possessor, and in **number** and **gender** with the object possessed ; it must be repeated before every noun.

47. The masculine forms **mon, ton, son**, my, thy, his or her, are used instead of *ma, ta, sa* before a feminine noun beginning with a vowel or an **h** mute.

48. Remark : 'her book' or 'his book' will be **son**

livre; 'her pen' or 'his pen' will be **sa plume**, because the possessive adjective in French takes the gender of the object possessed.

49. Numerals. Cardinal numbers: 1, *un* (m.), *une* (f.); 2, *deux*; 3, *trois*; 4, *quatre*; 5, *cinq*; 6, *six*; 7, *sept*; 8, *huit*; 9, *neuf*; 10, *dix*; 11, *onze*; 12, *douze*; 13, *treize*; 14, *quatorze*; 15, *quinze*; 16, *seize*; 17, *dix-sept*; 18, *dix-huit*; 19, *dix-neuf*; 20, *vingt*; 30, *trente*; 40, *quarante*; 50, *cinquante*; 60, *soixante*; 70, *soixante-dix*; 80, *quatre-vingts*; 90, *quatre-vingt-dix*; 100, *cent*; 1000, *mille*.

50. The conjunction **et**, and, is used only with 21, 31, 41, 51, 61, 71, *vingt et un*, etc.

51. Vingt and **cent** take an **s** if they are preceded by a number which multiplies them, and not followed by another.

52. Vingt and **cent** cannot take an **s**, if they are followed by another number, or if they are used to express the date of the year.

53. Mil is used instead of **mille** in mentioning a date in the Christian era. The numbers after **mille** are substantives, and treated as such: *un million*, a million, etc.

54. Ordinal numbers: 1st, *premier* (m.), *première* (f.); 2nd, *second* (m.), *seconde* (f.) or *deuxième*; 5th, *cinquième*; 9th, *neuvième*: to form all the others add **ième** to the cardinal number; for 21st, 31st, etc., use **unième**, not *première*.

N.B.—Those which end in **e** mute drop the **e**, and *quatre-vingts* drops the **s**.

55. Remark that the **c** of **second** and of its derivatives is pronounced like a **g**.—Before *onze*, *huit* and their derivatives no apostrophe is used.

56. Put the cardinal number instead of the ordinal used in English: (a.) after names of sovereigns, *Henri Quatre*, Henry the Fourth; (b.) in speaking of the date of the month, *le quatre juin*, the 4th of June.

Remark that in *Henri Quatre* the English 'the' is not translated, and that in *le quatre juin* 'of' is dropped.

57. Exception : for the first sovereign of the series, and for the first day of the month use the ordinal number.

58. Personal pronouns : The conjunctive personal pronouns are those which are immediately connected with the verb.

SINGULAR.

	1ST PERSON.	2ND PERSON.	3RD PERSON.		
	<i>Both genders.</i>	<i>Both genders.</i>	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Both genders.</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	Je, <i>I</i>	tu, <i>thou</i>	il, <i>he, it</i>	elle, <i>she, it</i>	
<i>Gen.</i>	.....	.....	en, <i>of him,</i> <i>of it</i>	en, <i>of her,</i> <i>of it</i>	
<i>Dat.</i>	me, <i>me</i>	te, <i>to thee</i>	lui, <i>to him,</i> <i>to it</i>	lui, <i>to her,</i> <i>to it</i>	y, <i>to it, to them</i>
<i>Acc.</i>	me, <i>me</i>	te, <i>thee</i>	le, <i>him, it</i>	la, <i>her, it</i>	

PLURAL.

	1ST PERSON.	2ND PERSON.	3RD PERSON.	
	<i>Both genders.</i>	<i>Both genders.</i>	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	nous, <i>you</i>	vous, <i>you</i>	ils,	elles, <i>they</i>
<i>Gen.</i>	.....	.....	en,	en, <i>of them</i>
<i>Dat.</i>	nous, <i>to us</i>	vous, <i>to you</i>	leur,	leur, <i>to them</i>
<i>Acc.</i>	nous, <i>us</i>	vous, <i>you</i>	les,	les, <i>them</i>

59. The conjunctive pronouns are generally placed before the verb.

60. When the sentence is interrogative the pronoun subject (nominative) is placed after the verb.

61. When the verb is in the second person singular, first and second persons plural of the imperative affirmative, *i.e.*, when there is no negative in the sentence, put the pronoun after the verb.

62. Tu, thou, is used in addressing persons with whom the speaker is on familiar terms.

63. When **vous**, you, is used in addressing one person only, the adjective agreeing with it does not take the plural number.

64. The **e** of *je, me, te, le* is cut off before a vowel.

65. Me and **te** are never used after the verb, use **moi** and **toi** instead ; before **en** use **m'**, **t'**.

66. Do not mistake an adjective (which is joined to a noun) for a pronoun (which is used instead of a noun).

67. The disjunctive personal pronouns are those which are used apart from the verb.

SINGULAR.

	1ST PERSON. <i>Both genders.</i>	2ND PERSON. <i>Both genders.</i>	3RD PERSON. <i>Masc. Fem.</i>	
<i>Nom.</i>	Moi, <i>I</i>	toi, <i>thou</i>	lui, <i>he, it</i>	elle, <i>she</i>
<i>Gen.</i>	de moi, <i>of me</i>	de toi, <i>of thee</i>	de lui, <i>of him,</i> <i>of it</i>	d'elle, <i>of her</i>
<i>Dat.</i>	à moi, <i>to me</i>	à toi, <i>to thee</i>	à lui, <i>to him, to it</i>	à elle, <i>to her</i>
<i>Acc.</i>	moi, <i>me</i>	toi, <i>thee</i>	lui, <i>him, it</i>	elle, <i>her</i>

PLURAL.

	1ST PERSON. <i>Both genders.</i>	2ND PERSON. <i>Both genders.</i>	3RD PERSON. <i>Masc. Fem.</i>	
<i>Nom.</i>	Nous, <i>we</i>	vous, <i>you</i>	eux	elles, <i>they</i>
<i>Gen.</i>	de nous, <i>of us</i>	de vous, <i>of you</i>	d'eux	d'elles, <i>of them</i>
<i>Dat.</i>	à nous, <i>to us</i>	à vous, <i>to you</i>	à eux	à elles, <i>to them</i>
<i>Acc.</i>	nous, <i>us</i>	vous, <i>you</i>	eux	elles, <i>them</i>

67 A. The above pronouns which have a preposition come after the verb; the others follow the same rule as the conjunctive pronouns.

68. These pronouns are used : when there is more than one subject to the verb.

69. In answer to a question : *qui est là ?* **Moi.**

70. For the sake of emphasis : **lui remporter un prix!**

71. After prepositions.

72. After *que, c'est, c'était.*

73. Before *même.*

74. The reflexive personal pronoun : first person : *me*, myself, *nous*, ourselves; 2nd person : *te*, thyself; *vous*, yourselves; 3rd person, conjunctive : *se*; disjunctive : *soi*, himself, itself, etc.

75. Possessive pronouns. When there is only one possessor :—

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		
	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Meaning.</i>
1st pers.	le mien	la mienne	les miens	les miennes	mine
2nd "	le tien	la tienne	les tiens	les tiennes	thine
3rd "	le sien	la sienne	les siens	les siennes	m. his, f. hers, n. its

When there is more than one possessor:—

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Both genders.</i>	<i>Meaning.</i>
1st pers.	le nôtre	la nôtre	les nôtres	ours
2nd „	le vôtre	la vôtre	les vôtres	yours
3rd „	le leur	la leur	les leurs	theirs

76. Relative pronouns. For persons and things: *qui*, who, which; *que*, whom, which, what; *dont*, whose, of or from whom or which; *lequel*, who, which, what.

77. For persons only: *de qui*, whose, or from whom; *à qui*, to whom.

78. For things only, after a preposition: **quoi**.

N.B.—The *e* of *que* is cut off before a vowel.

79. The relative pronouns *qui*, *que*, *quoi*, *dont*, are invariable, but *lequel* is variable.

80. The relative pronouns are always expressed in French, and never understood, as they often are in English.

81. All the relative pronouns can be used in interrogative sentences, except **dont**.

82. There is an interrogative adjective *quel* (m. sing.), *quelle* (f. sing.), *quels* (m. plur.), *quelles* (f. plur.).

83. The demonstrative adjective: **Ce** (m. sing.), this or that, before a consonant or an *h* aspirate; **cet** before a vowel or an *h* mute; fem. sing. **cette**; plural **ces**.

84. As **ce** means indifferently 'this' or 'that,' whenever it is desirable to distinguish *this* from *that*, **-ci**, here, or **-là**, there, are joined to the noun by a hyphen.

85. The demonstrative pronouns:—

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
Ce	 <i>this, that, it</i>	.....	.....
celui	celle, <i>this</i>	ceux	celles, <i>these, those</i>
celui-ci	celle-ci, <i>this</i>	ceux-ci	celles-ci, <i>these, the former</i>
celui-là	celle-là, <i>that</i>	ceux-là	celles-là, <i>those, the latter</i>
ceci	 <i>this</i>	.....	.....
cela	 <i>that</i>	.....	.....

86. Use **ce** before the third persons singular or plural of *être*, and before *qui* and *que*.

87. Use **celui**, etc., in reference to a noun expressed before.

88. Use **celui-ci**, **celui-là**, etc., when two or more objects have been spoken of.

89. Use **ceci**, **cela**, for an object pointed at, and not mentioned.

89A. Prepositions, some of the most commonly used : *de*, of, from; *à*, to, at; *avant*, before (of time or order); *après*, after; *devant*, before (of place); *derrière*, behind; *dans*, *en*, in; *près de*, near; *sur*, on; *sous*, under; *avec*, with; *sans*, without; *chez*, at, or in the house of; *pour*, for; *contre*, against; *par*, by; *malgré*, in spite of; *dès*, from, as early as.

90. Adverbs, of quantity; *assez*, enough; *trop*, too much; *peu*, little; *beaucoup*, *bien*, much, many; *tant*, so much, etc.

91. Adverbs of quantity: (with the exception of *bien*) require **de** without any article after them.

N.B.—*Bien* requires **de** and the article, except in the expression *bien d'autres*.

92. Place of adverbs: They generally come after the verb in simple tenses, and between the auxiliary and the past participle in compound tenses.

93. Beaucoup is never qualified by another adverb as in English; 'very much, too much, so much' are translated by *beaucoup*, *trop*, *tant*.

94. Adverbs form their degrees of comparison like adjectives.

95. Bien and **peu** form their degrees of comparison thus: *bien*, *mieux*, *le mieux*; *peu*, *moins*, *le moins*.

96. Mal forms its degrees of comparison regularly and irregularly: *mal*, *plus mal*, *le plus mal*; *mal*, *pis*, *le pis*.

97. Adverbs of manner can be formed by adding the termination *ment* to a feminine adjective.

98. If the feminine of the adjective ends with two vowels the last is cut off.

99. The following adverbs take an acute accent on the **e**

of the adjective, *aveuglement*, *précisément*. *Complètement* is now written in the dictionary of the French Academy, and should be by all, with a grave accent like *complète* from which it is formed. (This change was suggested in a remark on *complètement* by E. Littré.)

100. The following are formed irregularly: *brèvement*, *traîtreusement*.

101. From adjectives ending in *ent*, *ant*, form adverbs by changing *ent* into **emment**, *ant* into **amment**; exceptions: *lent*, **lentement**, *véhément*, **véhémentement**.

102. Adverbs of negation composed of two words: **ne...pas**, now **ne...point**, not (stronger); **ne...plus**, no more; **ne...rien**, nothing; **ne...que**, only; **ne...guère**, hardly; **ne...jamais**, never.

N.B.—The first part **ne** is placed before the verb immediately after the subject (if the subject changes its place the **ne** does not follow it: *ne parle-t-il pas*); the second part is placed after the verb in a simple tense, and after the auxiliary in a compound tense.

103. Indefinite adjectives: (Some of the most commonly used): *tout* (m. sing.), *tous* (m. pl.), *toute* (f. sing.), *toutes* (f. pl.), all; *aucun*, any, no, none (used with **ne**); *certain*, some, some one, a certain; *maint*, many; *quelque*, some; *autre*, other; *chaque* (invar.), each; *nul*, *nulle* (f.), no, none; *tel*, *telle* (f.), such; *quelconque* (after the noun), any; *plusieurs* (invar.), several; *même*, same; Where no remark is made, the feminine and the plural are formed regularly.

104. Indefinite pronouns (some of the most commonly used): *on*—and when euphony requires it, *l'on*—(sing.), one, people, they; *chacun*, *chacune*, each one, every one; *personne* (with **ne**), nobody; *quelqu'un*, some one, somebody; *quelque chose*, something; *rien* (with **ne**), nothing; *tout le monde*, everyone, everybody (and **not** all the world).

105. Conjunctions (some of the most commonly used): *car*, for, because; *comme*, as, like; *parce que*, because; *et*, and; *mais*, but; *or*, now, but; *ou*, or; *que*, that; *quand*, when; *ni*, nor, neither; *si*, if; *plutôt*, rather; *puisque*, since; *lorsque*, when; *pourquoi*, why; *quoique*, although.

106. Do not confuse the preposition 'for,' *pour*, with the conjunction 'for,' 'because,' *car*;—*où*, 'where,' has a grave accent; *ou*, 'or,' has none;—the conjunction *plutôt*, 'sooner,' is spelt in one word; the comparative of *tôt*, 'soon,' *plus tôt*, 'sooner,' is spelt in two words.

107. **Si**, meaning 'if,' is never immediately followed by the conditional: *si tu me donnes du papier, je te prêterai une plume*, if you give me some paper, I will lend you a pen; *si tu me donnais du papier, je te prêterais une plume*, if you gave me some paper, I would lend you a pen.

N.B.—**Si**, meaning **whether**, is followed by the future or the conditional: *je ne sais s'il viendra*, I do not know if (**whether**) he will come; *je ne savais s'il viendrait*, I did not know if (**whether**) he would come.

108. Interrogation: To ask a question in French put the pronoun after the verb in simple tenses, after the auxiliary in compound tenses.

109. With a verb in the third person singular ending in a vowel, insert a **t** between the verb and the pronoun.

110. With a verb in the first person singular ending in **e** mute, put an acute accent on the **e** to avoid two mute syllables coming together.

111. If the subject of the verb is a noun, put that noun first, and follow the rules given above notwithstanding.

112. Questions can always be asked by using **est-ce que?** *is it that?* in which case nothing is changed in the sentence.

113. Verbs: The English *do*, *docs*, *did*, are not translated into French; *do you speak?* *does he speak?* *did I speak?* would be in French: *parlez-vous?* *parle-t-il?* *parlais-je?*

114. In sentences like 'will you have some meat?' do not express 'have:': *veux-tu de la viande?*

115. The *stem* is that part of the word which does not change; the *termination* is that part of the word which changes. **EXAMPLES:** *donn-er*, to give; *je donn-ais*, I gave. **Donn** is the stem; **-er**, **-ais** are the terminations.

116. An auxiliary verb is one which helps to form some of the tenses of the other verbs : *être* and *avoir* are the two verbs used for that purpose in French.

117. There are four conjugations in French ; they are known by the termination of the infinitive :—

the 1st ends in **er**, *donn-er*, to give.

the 2nd ends in **ir**, *fin-ir*, to finish.

the 3rd ends in **oir**, *recev-oir*, to receive.

the 4th ends in **re**, *romp-re*, to break.

118. The past participle used as an adjective agrees with the noun : *la leçon négligée*, the neglected lesson ; remark that it comes after the noun.

119. Remark that the second person singular of the imperative has no **s** in the first conjugation, *donn-e* ;— that the **e** of the termination takes an acute accent in the first person singular indicative, used interrogatively, *donn-é-je ?*—and that the third person singular takes a euphonic **t** : *donne-t-il ?*

120. There are only seven verbs in **oir** conjugated like *recevoir*, viz.: *dev-oir*, to owe ; *red-ov-oir*, to owe still ; *recev-oir*, to receive ; *percev-oir*, to collect (taxes) ; *apercev-oir*, to perceive ; *concev-oir*, to conceive ; *décev-oir*, to deceive.

121. In the 4th conjugation, verbs which have a **d** before the termination of the infinitive do not take a **t** in the third person singular of the present indicative : *défend-re*, *il défend*, he defends.

122. Remark that there is no first person singular in the imperative of any verb.

123. **A list of the simple tenses**, or simple parts of a verb, *i.e.*, those which are not formed with the help of an auxiliary : present infinitive ; present and past participles ; present, imperfect, past definite, and future indicative ; present conditional ; present and imperfect subjunctive ; imperative.

N.B.—We use the term ‘ parts of a verb ’ on account of the objection some grammarians have to calling the participles, present and past, ‘ tenses.’

A list of the compound tenses, or parts of a verb, *i.e.*, those which are formed with the help of an auxiliary: perfect infinitive; compound participle; perfect, pluperfect, past anterior, future anterior indicative; conditional anterior; perfect and pluperfect subjunctive.

125. The 5 **primary** or **primitive parts** of a verb, *i.e.*, those which form all the other parts or tenses, are as follows: the present infinitive, the present participle, the past participle, the present indicative, and the past definite indicative.

126. The **present infinitive** forms the future indicative by the addition of *ai, as, a, ons, ez, ont*, and the present conditional by that of *ais, ais, ait, ions, iez, aient*.

N.B.—In the 3rd conjugation, drop **oi**: *recev(o)i*r, *recevrai, recevrais*; in the 4th drop **e**, *rompr(e)*, *romprai, romprais*.

127. The **present participle** forms the plural of the present indicative by changing *ant* into *ons, ez, ent*.

Remark, however, that in the 3rd conjugation we have *-oivent, ils reçoivent*, for the 3rd person plural.

The present participle forms also the whole of the **imperfect indicative** by changing *ant* into *ais, ais, ait, ions, iez, aient*, and the whole of the **present subjunctive** by changing *ant* into *e, es, e, ions, iez, ent*.

Do not forget that in the third conjugation the 1st and 2nd persons plural **only** follow the above rule for the present subjunctive: *recev-ant, que je reçoive, que tu reçoives, qu'il reçoive, que nous recev-ions, que vous recev-iez, qu'ils reçoivent*.

128. The **past participle** forms all the compound tenses with the help of some part of one of the auxiliary verbs; a glance at the table of verbs given on page 134 will show what part of the auxiliary verb is used to form the compound tense required.

129. The **present indicative** forms the 2nd person singular, the 1st and 2nd persons plural of the imperative by dropping the pronoun subject: *finis, finissons, finissez*. The 3rd person singular and the 3rd person plural are borrowed from the present subjunctive: let him give, *qu'il donne*; let them give, *qu'ils donnent*.

N.B.—In the first conjugation the **s** of the 2nd person singular is always dropped in the imperative: **donne**, give, from *tu donnes*; **va**, go, from *tu vas* (aller).

130. The past definite indicative forms the imperfect subjunctive by adding to the 2nd person (1) *se*, (2) *ses*, (3) see below, (1) *sions*, (2) *siez*, (3) *sent*.

Remark; the 3rd person singular has no **s** at all; it is distinguished by a circumflex accent and a **t**: *donnât, finit, reçût, rompit*.

131. Formation of the passive. To conjugate a verb in the passive, add its past participle to all the tenses of the verb *être*, to be.

N.B.—The past participle of a passive verb agrees in number and gender with the subject of the verb.

132. Reflexive verbs have two pronouns of the same person—one is the subject, the other the object.

133. All reflexive verbs form their compound tenses with the help of the auxiliary verb *être*, to be.

134. The past participle of reflexive verbs agrees in number and gender with *the object in the accusative case, if it comes before the past participle*.

In the following examples the object is in the accusative case, and feminine; *je me suis reposée, tu t'es reposée, elle s'est reposée*;—plural; *nous nous sommes reposées, vous vous êtes reposées, elles se sont reposées*.

184 Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verbs, and of the

avoir, to have.

être, to be.

Compound Tenses.

Simple Tenses.

Simple Tenses.

INFINITIVE.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.		COMPOUND PARTICIPLE.	
ayant	étant	ayant	eu été donné puni reçu rompu
PAST PARTICIPLE.		INDICATIVE.	
eu	été	PERFECT.	
INDICATIVE.		PLUPERFECT	
j'ai	je suis	j'avais	eu
tu as	tu es	tu avais	été
il a	il est	il avait	donné
nous avons	nous sommes	nous avions	puni
vous avez	vous êtes	vous aviez	reçu
ils ont	ils sont	ils avaient	rompu
IMPERFECT.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
j'avais	j'étais	j'eus	eu
tu avais	tu étais	tu eus	été
il avait	il était	il eut	donné
nous avions	nous étions	nous eûmes	puni
vous aviez	vous étiez	vous eûtes	reçu
ils avaient	ils étaient	ils eurent	rompu
PAST DEFINITE.		FUTURE ANTERIOR.	
j'eus	je fus	j'aurai	eu
tu eus	tu fus	tu auras	été
il eut	il fut	il aura	donné
nous eûmes	nous fûmes	nous aurons	puni
vous eûtes	vous fûtes	vous aurez	reçu
ils eurent	ils furent	ils auront	rompu
FUTURE.		CONDITIONAL ANTERIOR.	
j'aurai	je serai	j'aurais	eu
tu auras	tu seras	tu auras	été
il aura	il sera	il aurait	donné
nous aurons	nous serons	nous aurions	puni
vous aurez	vous serez	vous auriez	reçu
ils auront	ils seront	ils auraient	rompu
CONDITIONAL		SUBJUNCTIVE PERFECT.	
j'aurais	je serais	que j'aie	donné
tu aurais	tu serais	que tu aies	puni
il aurait	il serait	qu'il ait	reçu
nous aurions	nous serions	que nous ayons	rompu
vous auriez	vous seriez	que vous ayez	
ils auraient	ils seraient	qu'ils aient	
SUBJUNCTIVE		PLUPERFECT.	
que j'aie	que je sois	que j'eusse	eu
que tu aies	que tu sois	que tu eusses	été
qu'il ait	qu'il soit	qu'il eût	donné
que nous ayons	que nous soyons	que nous eussions	puni
que vous ayez	que vous soyez	que vous eussiez	reçu
qu'ils aient	qu'ils soient	qu'ils eussent	rompu
IMPERFECT.		IMPERATIVE.	
que j'eusse	que je fusse	 ayons	 soyons
que tu eusses	que tu fusses	aie ayez	sois soyez
qu'il eût	qu'il fût		
que nous eussions	que nous fussions		
que vous eussiez	que vous fussiez		
qu'ils eussent	qu'ils fussent		

Four Regular Verbs, 'Donner,' 'Punir,' 'Recevoir,' 'Rompre.'

1ST CONJUGATION. 2ND CONJUGATION. 3RD CONJUGATION. 4TH CONJUGATION.

Simple Tenses.

Simple Tenses.

Simple Tenses.

Simple Tenses.

INFINITIVE.

INFINITIVE.

INFINITIVE.

INFINITIVE.

donner, to give

punir, to punish

recevoir, to receive

rompre, to break

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

donnant

punissant

recevant

rompant

PAST PARTICIPLE.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

donné

puni

reçu

rompu

INDICATIVE. PRESENT

INDICATIVE. PRESENT.

je donne

je punis

je reçois

je romps

tu donnes

tu punis

tu reçois

tu romps

il donne

il punit

il reçoit

il rompt

nous donnons

nous punissons

nous recevons

nous rompons

vous donnez

vous punissez

vous recevez

vous rompez

ils donnent

ils punissent

ils reçoivent

ils rompent

IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT.

je donnais

je punissais

je recevais

je rompais

tu donnais

tu punissais

tu recevais

tu rompais

il donnait

il punissait

il recevait

il rompait

nous donnions

nous punissions

nous recevions

nous romptions

vous donniez

vous punissiez

vous receviez

vous rompiez

ils donnaient

ils punissaient

ils recevaient

ils rompaient

PAST DEFINITE.

PAST DEFINITE.

je donnai

je punis

je reçus

je rompis

tu donnas

tu punis

tu reçus

tu rompis

il donna

il punit

il reçut

il rompit

nous donnâmes

nous punîmes

nous reçûmes

nous romptîmes

vous donnâtes

vous punîtes

vous reçûtes

vous romptîtes

ils donnèrent

ils punirent

ils reçurent

ils rompirent

FUTURE.

FUTURE.

je donnerai

je punirai

je recevrai

je romprai

tu donneras

tu puniras

tu recevras

tu rompras

il donnera

il punira

il recevra

il rompra

nous donnerons

nous punirons

nous recevrons

nous romprons

vous donnerez

vous punirez

vous recevrez

vous romprez

ils donneront

ils puniront

ils recevront

ils rompront

CONDITIONAL. PRESENT.

CONDITIONAL. PRESENT.

je donnerais

je punirais

je recevrais

je romprais

tu donnerais

tu punirais

tu recevrais

tu romprais

il donnerait

il punirait

il recevrait

il romprait

nous donnerions

nous punirions

nous recevriions

nous romprions

vous donneriez

vous puniriez

vous recevriez

vous rompriez

ils donneraient

ils puniraient

ils recevraient

ils rompraient

SUBJUNCTIVE. PRESENT.

SUBJUNCTIVE. PRESENT.

que je donne

que je punisse

que je reçoive

que je rompe

que tu donnes

que tu punisses

que tu reçoives

que tu rompes

qu'il donne

qu'il punisse

qu'il reçoive

qu'il rompe

que nous donnions

que nous punissions

que nous recevions

que nous romptions

que vous donniez

que vous punissiez

que vous receviez

que vous rompiez

qu'ils donnent

qu'ils punissent

qu'ils reçoivent

qu'ils rompent

IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT.

que je donnasse

que je punisse

que je reçusse

que je rompisse

que tu donnasses

que tu punisses

que tu reçusses

que tu rompisses

qu'il donuât

qu'il punît

qu'il reçût

qu'il rompit

que nous donnassions

que nous punissions

que nous reçussions

que nous rompiissions

que vous donnassiez

que vous punissiez

que vous reçussiez

que vous rompiessiez

qu'ils donnassent

qu'ils punissent

qu'ils reçussent

qu'ils rompiissent

IMPERATIVE.

IMPERATIVE.

..... donne

..... donnons

..... punis

..... punissons

..... reçois

..... recevons

..... romps

..... rompons

..... donnez

..... punissez

..... recevez

..... rompez

..... rompez

..... rompez

..... rompez

CONVERSATION.

N.B.—The English is not intended as the literal translation, but as the equivalent of the French.

UN RENDEZ-VOUS MANQUÉ.

1. GEORGES.—Eh bien ! monsieur le déserteur, c'est ainsi que vous manquez à vos rendez-vous.

CHARLES.—Ah, mon cher, ne m'en parle pas, je suis désolé.

G.—Je le crois bien, on le serait à moins.

2. C.—J'espère bien que tu me pardonneras, ce n'est pas de ma faute.

G.—C'est ce que nous verrons ! Rends-moi compte de ta conduite ; tu n'as pas tenu ta promesse ; comment cela se fait-il ?

3. C.—Je vais te raconter ce qui s'est passé ; tu verras que je n'ai pas eu de chance, et que c'est bien malgré moi que je t'ai fait une impolitesse.

AN APPOINTMENT NOT KEPT.

GEORGE.—Well ! deserter, this is the way you fail to keep your appointments.

CHARLES.—Oh, my dear fellow, don't mention it, I am very sorry.

G.—I should think you were indeed ; you have good reason to be so.

C.—Really, I hope you will forgive me ; it was no fault of mine.

G.—We shall see that ! Give an account of yourself ; you have not kept your promise, how is that ?

C.—I will tell you what happened ; you will see that I was unlucky, and that it was quite against my will that I was rude to you.

4. G.—Tu as manqué, par dessus le marché, une bonne partie de cricket.

C.—D'abord il faut que je te dise que chez nous on ne sait jamais l'heure.

5. G.—Bref, tu as manqué le train.

C.—Précisément ; je suis arrivé à la gare trois minutes et trente-cinq secondes après le départ du train.

6. G.—Le nombre de secondes ne fait rien à l'affaire ; ensuite.

C.—Il ne me restait plus qu'une seule ressource.

G.—C'était de prendre une voiture.

7. C.—Je hélai une voiture, et, en montant, j'ai failli attraper une entorse.

G.—Comment as-tu fait ton compte ?

C.—En mettant le pied sur " la marche "...

8. G.—On dit " la marche " en parlant d'un escalier, mais non pas en parlant d'une voiture.

C.—Que faut-il dire alors ?

G.—On se sert du mot *marchepied*

G.—Besides, you missed a good game at cricket.

C.—First, I must tell you that at home they never know the time.

G.—In short, you missed the train.

C.—Just so ; I got to the station three minutes and thirty-five seconds after the train had started.

G.—Never mind the number of seconds ; go on !

C.—I had but one course left open to me.

G.—Which was to drive.

C.—I hailed a cab, and in getting in I nearly sprained my ankle.

G.—How did you manage that ?

C.—On putting my foot on the step...(Charles uses the wrong French word).

G.—We say " *marche* " in speaking of a flight of stairs, but not in speaking of a carriage.

C.—What must I say then ?

G.—You must use the word " *marchepied* " (step).

9. C.—En montant dans la voiture j'ai glissé et j'ai manqué de me fouler le pied. Jet'assure que je l'ai échappé belle.

G.—Voilà un détail fort peu intéressant.

10. C.—Je te remercie de la part que tu prends à mes malheurs.

G.—Il n'y a pas de quoi.

C.—Malgré cet accident, je sautai bravement dans le "char numéroté."

11. G.—Et le "char numéroté," comme tu l'appelles, partit à fond de train.

C.—Non, tu n'y es pas ; il ne bougea pas.

G.—Tiens ! et pourquoi ?

12. C.—Parce que je n'avais pas dit au cocher où il fallait me conduire.

G.—Omission facile à réparer.

C.—J'ai ouvert "la fenêtre" qui était fermée.

13. G. — Quel français exécrable ! Malheureux ! Quand il s'agit d'une voiture on doit dire : "J'ai baissé la glace qui était levée."

C.—On stepping into the carriage I slipped and nearly sprained my ankle. I assure you I had a narrow escape.

G.—That is not a very interesting detail.

C.—Thank you for sympathising with my misfortunes.

G.—Pray don't mention it.

C.—In spite of that accident, I jumped bravely into the "numbered chariot"...

G.—And the "numbered chariot," as you call it, went off at full speed.

C.—No, you are wrong there ; it did not move.

G.—Indeed ! and why ?

C.—Because I had not told the driver where to take me.

G.—That was easily remedied.

C.—I opened the window which was shut.

G. — What horrible French ! Unlucky creature ! When you talk of a carriage you must say : "I put down the window which was up."

C.—C'est vrai ; je baissai donc la glace, je donnai ton adresse...

G.—Et te voilà parti !

14. C.—Non, pas encore ; le cocher s'aperçut tout à coup que son cheval secouait violemment la tête.

G.—Voulant dire par là qu'il refusait de marcher. En cheval intelligent il ne voulait pas avoir affaire à un maladroit qui avait failli se fouler le pied.

15. C.—Pas du tout ; c'était pour faire comprendre à son maître qu'il avait oublié de lui ôter sa musette. Le cocher saute de dessus son siège, ôte la musette de son cheval, remonte en moins de temps que je ne mets à le dire...

16. G. — Heureusement pour toi.

C.—Et nous partons.

G.—Enfin ! ce n'est pas malheureux ! Abrège, cher ami, sans cela nous en aurons pour jusqu'à demain.

17. C.—Tu es donc bien pressé ?

G.—En effet. Je suis pressé d'arriver au fait.

C. — That's true ; well then, I put down the window, and gave your address.

G.—And off you went !

C.—No, not yet ; the driver suddenly found out that his horse was shaking his head violently.

G.—Meaning by that that he refused to go on. Being an intelligent horse he would have nothing to do with a clumsy fellow who had nearly sprained his ankle.

C.—Not at all ; it was to make his master understand that he had forgotten to take off his nosebag. The driver jumps off his seat, takes off his horse's nose-bag, gets up again in less time than I take to say it...

G.—Luckily for you.

C.—And off we go.

G. — At last ! That's lucky ! cut it short, my dear friend, otherwise you won't have done before to-morrow.

C.—You are in a great hurry then ?

G.—I am ; I am in a hurry to get to the point.

C. — Malheureusement, mon cheval n'était pas pressé, lui.

18. Il n'avait que la peau sur les os ; il était fourbu, et j'ai découvert en payant ma course (*the drive*) qu'il avait l'œil vairon.

G.—Une véritable rosse.

19. C.—Et son maître un coquin fieffé, comme tu vas voir.

G.—Mon pauvre ami, tu étais bien mal tombé.

C.—J'ai toujours eu la main malheureuse.

20. G.—Tu n'as guère de chance, en effet ; finis ton histoire, elle devient tout à fait intéressante.

C.—Après avoir fait trois milles, en passant par une quantité de rues que je ne connaissais pas, même de nom...

21. G.—Un vrai voyage à la découverte ; c'est charmant.

C. — Cela dépend des goûts.

G.—Oui, c'est cela, chacun son goût.

22. C.—Les opinions sont libres. Après avoir fait trois milles, le cheval s'arrête,

C. — Unfortunately my horse was not in a hurry.

It was like a bag of bones, it was a foundered horse, and I discovered when I paid my fare that it was wall-eyed.

G.—A regular jade.

C. — And its master a thorough scoundrel, as you will see.

G.—Poor fellow, you had made an unlucky choice.

C.—I have always been unlucky.

G.—You have not much luck, that's true ; finish your story, it is becoming quite interesting.

C.—After having driven three miles, and having passed through a number of streets which I did not know, even by name...

G.—A regular voyage of discovery ; it's charming.

C.—That's a matter of taste.

G. — Yes, that's right, everyone to his taste.

C.—I am for freedom of opinion. After having gone three miles, the horse stops,

le cocher descend et vient m'ouvrir "la porte." *

G.—Ah ! miséricorde !

23. C.—Qu'est-ce qu'il te prend donc ? Vas-tu te trouver mal ?

G.—Il faut dire la portière d'une voiture.

C.—Pardon.

G.—Va toujours ; je te pardonne, mais dépêche-toi.

24. C. — Mon cocher m'ouvre la portière et me dit d'un ton mielleux : " Monsieur, mon cheval ne peut plus marcher."

25. G.—Je m'y attendais d'après la description que tu m'en avais faite.

C.—En effet, cela devait être. " Payez-moi ma course (*drive*), c'est dix shillings," continua-t-il.

26. G. — Ah ! Voilà le quart d'heure de Rabelais. †

C.—Qui est-ce qui parle de Rabelais ?

G.—Il est évident que tu ne connais pas l'expression. Elle est pourtant très usitée ; elle est dans la bouche de tout le monde.

the driver alights, and comes to open the door.*

G.—Oh ! Mercy on me !

C.—What is the matter now ? Are you going to faint ?

G.—You must say the "portière" when speaking of a carriage.

C.—Excuse me.

G.—Go on ; I forgive you, only make haste !

C.—My driver opens the door, and says to me, in a mild voice : " Sir, my horse cannot go on."

G.—I expected that from your description of him.

C.—Indeed, it was to be expected. " Pay me my fare," he went on, " it's ten shillings."

G.—Ah ! Now comes the 'quart d'heure de Rabelais.' †

C.—Who is saying anything about Rabelais ?

G.—You evidently don't know the expression. It is very common however ; it is in everybody's mouth.

* "La porte d'une voiture" would sound as ludicrous to a Frenchman as "the gate of a carriage" would to an Englishman.

† Rabelais' quarter of an hour, *i.e.* the trying time for settling accounts.

27. C.—Explique-la-moi.

G.—Volontiers, car je sais que tu m'en sauras gré.

C.—Je suis tout oreilles.

28. G.—Eh bien, le moment toujours désagréable et quelquefois embarrassant, où il faut payer la note, solder son compte, mettre la main à la poche, délier les cordons de sa bourse, s'appelle "le quart d'heure de Rabelais."

29. C.—Qu'est-ce que Rabelais ?

G.—Rabelais est un écrivain très célèbre de la première moitié du seizième siècle.

C.—Était-ce un Anglais, était-il Italien, de quelle nationalité était-il ?

30. G.—Il était Français, tout ce qu'il y a de plus français, français jusqu'à la moëlle des os.

C.—Merci du renseignement ; mais pourquoi dit-on le quart d'heure de Rabelais plutôt que celui de Racine, de Molière, de Boileau ?

31. G.—Je vais te le dire.

C.—Et mon histoire qui n'est pas finie ?

C.—Explain it to me.

G.—Willingly, for I am certain you will thank me for it.

C.—I am all attention.

G.—Well then, the time always a disagreeable and sometimes an awkward one, when we must pay the bill, settle our account, put our hand into our pockets, loosen our purse-strings, is called "Rabelais' quarter of an hour."

C.—Who's Rabelais ?

G.—Rabelais was a very celebrated writer of the first half of the sixteenth century.

C.—Was he an Englishman, an Italian, of what nation was he ?

G.—He was French, as French as could be, French to the very back-bone.

C.—Thanks for the information ; but why do people say "Rabelais' quart d'heure" rather than Racine's, Molière's, Boileau's ?

G.—I will tell you.

C.—And my anecdote which is not finished !

G.—Ton histoire attendra ; c'est à mon tour maintenant de parler.

C.—Et c'est à moi d'écouter. Je veux bien ; tu vois que je suis accommodant et facile à vivre.

32. G.—Oui, il faut avouer que tu as bon caractère ; je me moque de toi et tu prends la chose en bon enfant.

C.—C'est vrai, j'ai toujours eu la réputation d'avoir bon caractère.

33. G.—A propos du mot "caractère," traduis-moi donc cette phrase, "he has a bad character."

C.—Tu ne m'attraperas pas cette fois. "He has a bad character," se traduit en français par : "il a une mauvaise réputation."

34. G.—Je commence mon anecdote ; attention ! On raconte que Rabelais, revenant d'un voyage qu'il avait fait à Rome, fut forcé de s'arrêter à Lyon, faute d'argent pour continuer sa route.

35. Que faire ? Il fallait absolument qu'il arrivât à Paris sans délai ; il avait une importante communi-

G.—Your anecdote can wait ; it is my turn now to speak.

C.—And it is my turn to listen. I am willing ; you see that I am accommodating and easy-going.

G.—Yes, it must be owned that you are good-tempered ; I chaff you, and you take it all good-humouredly.

C.—Yes, that's true, I have always had the reputation of being good-tempered.

G.—Talking of the word "caractère," just translate this sentence, "he has a bad character."

C.—You won't catch me this time. "He has a bad character" is translated into French by : "il a une mauvaise réputation."

G.—I am going to begin my anecdote ; listen ! It is said that Rabelais, on his way from Rome, was compelled to stop at Lyons, for want of money to continue his journey.

What was he to do ? It was absolutely necessary for him to get to Paris without delay ; he had to take an

cation de l'ambassadeur à porter au roi François Premier.

36. Voici le singulier stratagème qu'il imagina pour repartir sans retard et voyager aux frais du gouvernement.

37. Il confia, sous le sceau du plus grand secret, à quelques personnages marquants de la bonne ville de Lyon, qu'il allait à Paris muni d'un poison subtil pour empoisonner le roi.

38. "Avec cela," disait-il, en leur montrant une espèce de poudre fort inoffensive, "je vais vous délivrer de ce tyran qui boit le sang du peuple et qui dévore la France."

39. Saisis d'horreur, les fidèles sujets de Sa Majesté préviennent les magistrats : on s'empare du prétendu empoisonneur, on l'emmène à Paris sous bonne escorte.

40. Le roi, apprenant qu'un grand criminel vient d'être amené dans la capitale, ordonne qu'on le fasse venir en sa présence.

41. Rabelais est introduit,

important message from the ambassador to the king, Francis the First.

This is the singular stratagem which he adopted to enable him to start off again without delay, and travel at the government's expense.

He confided, under the seal of great secrecy, to some persons of note of the good town of Lyons, that he was going to Paris provided with a subtle poison to poison the king.

"With this," said he, as he showed them some very harmless powder, "I am going to rid you of this tyrant who drinks the blood of the people, and devours France."

Horried at this, the faithful subjects of his Majesty warn the magistrates, the would-be poisoner is apprehended, and taken to Paris in safe custody.

The king, on hearing that a great criminal had just been brought to the capital, ordered him to be brought before him.

Rabelais is ushered in, and

et aussitôt reconnu par son souverain ; tout s'explique, bien entendu, et on fait des gorges chaudes de l'aventure.

42. Depuis ce temps on appelle l'instant où il faut payer ses dépenses "le quart d'heure de Rabelais."

C.—Merci de l'anecdote : je m'en souviendrai.

43. Maintenant, je finis mon histoire. Pendant que je discutais le prix de la course avec mon cocher, il s'était formé autour de nous un rassemblement de gens de fort mauvaise mine ;

44. Plus le rassemblement grossissait, plus mon cocher devenait insolent.

G.—Comme de juste.

C.—On commençait déjà à me bousculer.

45. G.—Et tu commençais à avoir peur, ne t'en défends pas.

C.—Cela se pourrait bien ; du reste, il y avait de quoi, n'est-ce pas, conviens-en ?

46. G.—Sans aucun doute.

C.—Je payai donc, de fort mauvaise grâce, les dix shillings...

is immediately recognised by his sovereign ; all is of course explained, and the adventure excites much laughter.

Ever since then, the time when expenses have to be paid has been called "Rabelais' quarter of an hour."

C.—Thanks for the anecdote ; I shall remember it.

Now, I shall finish my tale. Whilst I was discussing the fare with my driver, a mob of very ill-looking fellows had collected around us ;

The larger the mob grew, the more insolent my driver became.

G.—Naturally.

C.—They were already beginning to hustle me.

G.—And you were beginning to be afraid, don't deny it.

C.—That's very likely ; after all, there was some reason for it ; was there not, confess ?

G.—Undoubtedly.

C.—Well, I paid, very unwillingly indeed, the ten shillings....

G.—Et tu t'empresas de retourner chez toi ?

47. C.—Pas si vite que tout cela. Tu oublies que je ne savais pas où j'étais.

G.—Comment as-tu fait pour retrouver ta route ?

C.—Pour comble d'humiliation, le susdit cocher, reprenant son ton mielleux, a offert de m'indiquer le chemin de mon domicile moyennant dix autres shillings.

48. G.—Ah ! par exemple ! c'est trop fort ! Tu les lui as donnés ?

b.

C.—Il l'a bien fallu pour sortir des griffes de tous les va-nu-pieds, filous et autres compagnons du même acabit qui m'entouraient.

49. G.—En effet, il fallait sortir de là coûte que coûte ; mon pauvre ami, que je te plains ! Viens donc jouer avec nous mercredi prochain.

50. C. — Volontiers ; je tâcherai bien de ne pas manquer le train.

G. — And you hurried home ?

C.—Not so fast as all that. You forget that I did not know where I was.

G.—How did you manage to find your way again ?

C.—To crown all, the aforesaid driver, resuming his soft tone of voice, offered to show me the way home for ten shillings more.

G.—Well, I never heard of such a thing ! that's too bad ! Did you give them to him ?

C.—I was obliged to do so, to get out of the clutches of all those vagabonds, thieves, and others of the same stamp who surrounded me.

G.—True ! it was necessary to get out of their company at any cost ; my dear fellow, how I pity you ! Come and play with us next Wednesday.

C.—Willingly ! I will try and not miss the train.

G.—L'exactitude est la politesse des grands.

C.—Et le devoir des petits. Alors, c'est convenu, à mercredi?

G.—C'est cela, au revoir,

G.—Punctuality is the politeness of the great.

C.—And the duty of the lowly. It is settled for next Wednesday?

G.—All right we shall meet again.

“OPEN SESAME!”

Let us say “Open Philology!” and see if, *Monsieur Brachet aidant*, we cannot find our way to the explanation of some of the difficulties and apparent anomalies which the pupil has encountered on going through this little work.

French is a *Romance Language*, that is to say, one of the languages derived chiefly from *Latin*.

Latin, like most languages, was made up of two parts, the literary or classical Latin, spoken and written by the educated, and the popular Latin, spoken by the people: the origin of the majority of French words, phrases, etc., and even of many grammatical rules, is to be found in popular Latin.

1. **Amour, orgue** (page 75) are masculine in the singular, and feminine in the plural. This appears to be a sort of compromise between common custom and the rules laid down by the scholars of the sixteenth century, who wanted to make great reforms in the language, and succeeded in many instances, though they failed in others. As nouns, masculine and neuter in Latin, were generally masculine in French, they determined to make **amour** (*amor*, masc.), and **orgue** (*organum*, neuter) follow the rule; but the people, who had got into the habit of making them feminine, resisted; hence a great confusion, which was eventually put an end to by grammarians who made the rule now followed.

2. Délice (p. 75) is masculine in the singular, and feminine in the plural. The singular comes from the Latin neuter *delicium*, and is masculine in French, according to the general rule (see above). The plural comes from the Latin feminine plural, *deliciæ*.

3. Gens is the plural of *gent*, a noun feminine singular, not much used now, and derived from a Latin feminine (*gens, gentem*, nation). *Gens* is chiefly used to designate individuals, *men*, and yet its singular is feminine; this conflict between the two genders explains the existence of the rules given on pages 63-66.

4. The past participle agreeing with its object (p. 70). Till the sixteenth century, there seems to have been no fixed rules for the agreement of the past participle; in the sixteenth century non-agreement, if the object followed, was introduced, and, by degrees, rules were made in imitation of the construction common in popular Latin: habeo ‘*scriptum* litteras,’ j’ai *écrit* des lettres; and ‘*litteræ* quas habeo *scriptas*,’ les lettres que j’ai *écrites*, the letters which I have written.

5. Grand’mère. Some Latin adjectives have two distinct forms for the masculine and feminine, like *bonus, bonæ*; some have only one form for both genders, as *grandis*; the French word **grand** followed the Latin *grandis*, and had also but one form for the two genders. This distinction between the two classes of adjectives was lost sight of, and the rule was made that the feminine was to be formed by adding an *e* mute to the masculine. Finding several words like *grand mère* pronounced and spelt without an *e*, grammarians of Old thought the *e* had been dropped, and put in an apostrophe: *grand’mère*; custom has kept the apostrophe, but philology has taught us that it is useless, and some day, perhaps, it may disappear, and *grand’mère* will be spelt in one word like the English ‘grandmother.’

6. The future and the conditional are formed from the infinitive present: this is not merely an arbitrary rule invented to help the student to learn the regular verbs. The future and the conditional are, indeed, compounded of the infinitive of the verb, and the terminations of the present and imperfect indicative of the auxiliary *avoir*, *donner* **ai**: *donner* **as**, etc.; *donner* (av)**ons**, etc.; *donner* (av)**aïs**, etc. Besides the form *amabo*, I shall love, there was, in Low Latin, another way of expressing the future: *amare habeo*, I have to love; the latter is the origin of the French future *aimer-ai*; and *amare habebam*, I had to love, has given the conditional *aimer-(av)aïs*.

7. Il n'en peut mais: in this idiomatic expression (see Lesson XXIX.) *mais* has its original meaning of 'plus' from the Latin *magis*, more; the phrase means 'he cannot any more,' 'he cannot help it.' **Mais**, 'but,' is the same word, and has the same etymology, although its meaning appears to be very different.

8. 'On,' the indefinite pronoun, comes from 'homo': 'No etymology is admissible, says Monsieur Brachet, unless it accounts for everyone of the letters of the word which it professes to explain; in every etymology which involves a change of letters, we must be able to produce at least one example of a change thoroughly like the one suggested.' Let us see if the above etymology will stand this test: the **h** of *homo* has been dropped; this occurs not only in French words, like **avoir**, from *habere*, but also in Latin itself: *ic*, *oc*, *omo* are found constantly, in inscriptions for *hic*, *hoc*, *homo*, etc.; the **m** has become an **n**; this takes place in *suum*, **son**, his; *mappa*, **nappe**, tablecloth, etc.; the **o** is the last vowel of the word, and the last vowel, as a rule, is either dropped as in *mer*, from *mare*, or becomes **e** mute, as in *rose*, from *rosa*. If we take **on**, and go backwards, we find in Old French the forms *om*, *hom*, *home*, which lead us to our starting point 'homo.'

READING LESSONS.

Pensée d'un Savant.

Plus on sait, plus on voit qu'on est un ignorant ;
On se sent plus petit, on trouve Dieu plus grand.

Lazare Hoche.

Jamais général ne posséda mieux le cœur de son armée : “ Aime,” disait-il souvent, “ si tu veux être aimé ;” c’est ainsi, c’est en aimant ses soldats qu’il en était devenu l’idole. Son bien était le leur, et sa générosité n’avait point de bornes : “ Tu aurais dans ta bourse 200,000 francs de plus,” lui dit un de ses proches, “ si tu ne donnais au tiers et au quart tout ce que tu possèdes.” — “ J’aurais un million de moins dans celle de mes amis,” répondit Hoche, “ si j’en avais besoin.”

Au tiers et au quart, to everybody, to the first who turns up.

La Queue du chien d'Alcibiade.

Avoir un si beau chien et lui couper la queue ! Tel fut le cri général des Athéniens

quand Alcibiade s'avisa de dépouiller de sa plus belle parure un animal qui lui avait coûté soixante-dix mines (environ six mille trois cents livres). Des amis représentèrent à Alcibiade lui-même que cette action était blâmée par tous et faisait mal parler de lui. "Voilà précisément ce que je demandais," leur dit-il en riant : "tant que les Athéniens s'entretiendront de cela, ils ne diront rien de pis sur mon compte."

Alcibiade, Alcibiades, a celebrated Athenian general and statesman, was born B.C. 450. *Livres*, same as francs. *Sur mon compte*, about me, concerning me, of me.

Une belle Action.

Scribe passait l'automne à la campagne chez des amis. On employait les soirées à lire des romans anglais. La lectrice était une pauvre institutrice, qui, un jour, dans un entr'acte de lecture, dit en soupirant : "Ah ! si je pouvais jamais réaliser mon rêve!—Et quel est donc votre rêve, mademoiselle ?" lui demanda Scribe.—"D'avoir quelque jour, dans un bien long temps, douze cents livres de rente, qui me donneraient l'indépendance et le repos." A quelque temps de là, un soir, après le dernier chapitre d'un roman assez insignifiant, Scribe dit tout à coup à la lectrice :—"Savez-vous, mademoiselle, qu'il y a là un fort joli sujet de comédie en un acte : c'est vous qui me l'avez fourni; voulez-vous que nous fassions la pièce ensemble ?" Vous

jugez si elle accepta. Trois jours après, Scribe descend au salon avec la comédie achevée, et trois mois plus tard on annonce la première représentation. Scribe se rend chez son agent dramatique. — “ Aujourd’hui, lui dit-il, on donne une pièce de moi, où j’ai une collaboratrice. Quel sera le succès de l’ouvrage ? je l’ignore ; mais ce que je sais, c’est que cette comédie rapportera douze cents francs par an à ma collaboratrice tout le temps de sa vie : arrangez-vous pour que cela ait l’air naturel.” Peut-on faire un don princier d’une manière plus délicate ?

Scribe, a celebrated French dramatic writer, born at Paris, 1791 ; died 1861.

Chez nous !

(AT HOME !)

Tout à coup la porte s’ouvre, et Bébé s’élançe en criant : “ Petit père, le dîner est servi.” — “ Qu’est-ce qu’il y a pour dîner ? ” La nappe était blanche comme la neige en décembre, les couverts étincelaient sous la lampe, la fumée du potage s’engouffrait sous l’abat-jour et voilait la flamme en répandant une bonne odeur de choux. Les portes étaient bien closes, les rideaux soigneusement tirés ; Bébé se hissait sur sa grande chaise et tendait le cou pour qu’on lui nouât sa serviette, tout en criant, les mains en l’air : “ La bonne soupe aux choux.” Et souriant en moi-même, je disais : “ Le bambin a tous mes goûts ! ” La maman arrivait bientôt et toute

joyeuse, ôtant ses gants étroits : " Il y a, je crois bien, monsieur, quelque chose que vous aimez beaucoup," me disait-elle. C'était jour de faisan ! et instinctivement, je me retournais un peu pour voir sur le buffet la bouteille poussiéreuse de mon vieux chambertin ! Faisan et chambertin ! la Providence les créa l'un pour l'autre, et ma femme jamais ne les a séparés. " Sabre de bois ! mes enfants, qu'on est bien chez nous ! " m'écriai-je en riant de bon cœur. " Sabre de bois ! sabre de bois !—Pistolet de paille ! " ajoutait Bébé, en tendant le bec au potage. Et tout le monde éclatait de rire.

Bébé. French children are called *bébés*, babies, much later than English ones. *Sabre de bois ! Pistolet de paille !* Brave warriors of old swore by their weapons as Benedick in "*Much Ado about Nothing*" : " By my sword, Beatrice, thou lovest me." The heroes of French nursery tales swear by their " wooden sword " or their " straw pistol," harmless implements of warfare.

Le Ballon.

Un garçonnet reçut, pour avoir été sage,
 Un petit ballon rouge ; aussitôt, tout joyeux
 Il courut le montrer aux enfants de son âge
 Dont chaque jour il partageait les jeux.
 Au bout d'un fil la sphère transparente
 Se balançait légèrement,
 Montant, descendant, tournoyant ;
 Notre marmot, bouche béante,
 La contemplait avec ravissement.
 Un méchant petit camarade [nois,
 (Car il est des méchants) soudain vint, en sour-
 Faire au ballon ce qu'autrefois
 Fit à son chien le bel Alcibiade ;

Aussitôt, le léger captif
Par dessus les maisons se perdit dans l'espace ;
L'enfant cria, pleura ; mais, hélas ! quoi qu'il
Il ne revit jamais le fugitif. [fasse,

De nos illusions c'est l'image fidèle :
Nous les plaçons le plus souvent
Dans quelque jouet décevant
Gonflé de vent ;
La réalité vient et coupe la ficelle.

En sournois, like a sneak, slyly ; *en* (la manière d'un) *sournois*, in the manner of a sneak. *Fit à son chien*, see the anecdote entitled *La queue du chien d'Alcibiade*, page 151.

Vous êtes Orfèvre, Monsieur Josse.

(NOTHING LIKE LEATHER.)

Cette phrase, devenue proverbiale, est en usage dans notre langue pour caractériser ces donneurs de conseils, qui, au lieu de prendre part à votre position, ne considèrent que leur intérêt personnel. Elle est empruntée à *l'Amour médecin* de Molière.

La fille de Sganarelle est plongée dans une profonde mélancolie, dans une tristesse dont rien ne la peut tirer, et le pauvre père, qui est à bout de moyens, aurait besoin, dit-il, d'un bon conseil sur cette matière.

Il consulte donc sa nièce, sa voisine et ses amis sur ce qu'il doit faire. Chacun de ces personnages donne un conseil dicté par son propre intérêt, et l'orfèvre, M. Josse, entre autres, pense qu'une belle garniture de diamants, ou de rubis, ou d'émeraudes, serait la

chose la plus capable de réjouir Lucinde. Malgré son chagrin, Sganarelle n'a pas perdu le sens, et il découvre aisément les secrètes intentions de ses conseillers : "Tous ces conseils sont admirables, assurément, mais je les tiens un peu intéressés, et trouve que vous me conseillez fort bien pour vous. **Vous êtes orfèvre, Monsieur Josse**, et votre conseil sent son homme, qui a envie de se défaire de sa marchandise." Le mot : Vous êtes orfèvre, dit à lui seul toute la pensée de Sganarelle : il venait là parfaitement à propos, et c'est parce qu'il tombait juste que le bon sens public l'a adopté.

Molière (Jean Baptiste Poquelin, called Molière), the great French dramatist, was born at Paris, January 15, 1622, and died January 17, 1673. *A bout de moyens*, at his wit's end. *Sent son homme qui...*, literally : Savours of a man who, *i.e.* looks (or sounds) like the advice of a man who...

Dandolo.

Après deux ans de guerre, où Venise et
Byzance
Avaient rivalisé de haine et de puissance,
Les Vénitiens vaincus demandent un traité.
Auprès de l'empereur part comme député
Un des plus nobles fils de la fière Venise,
Dandolo. L'empereur a dit : "Qu'on l'introduise !"

Il entre. Le traité l'attendait tout écrit.
"Lisez, lui dit le prince, et puis signez..." Il lit.
Mais soudain, pâlisant de colère, il s'écrie :
"Ce traité flétrirait mon nom et ma patrie,

"Je ne signerai pas !" L'impétueux César
Se lève.. Dandolo l'écrase d'un regard.
Le prince veut parler de présents...il s'indigne;
De bourreaux...il sourit; de prêtres...il se
signe !

Alors, tout écumant de honte et de fureur :
 “ Si tu ne consens pas, traître, dit l'empereur,
 “ J'appelle ici soudain quatre esclaves fidèles,
 “ Je te fais garrotter, et là, dans tes prunelles,
 “ Un fer rouge éteindra le jour évanoui ;
 “ Ainsi, hâte-toi donc, et réponds enfin : oui ! ”
 Il se tait !... On apporte une lame brûlante ;
 Il se tait !... On l'applique à sa paupière ar-
 dente ;

Il se tait!...De ses yeux, où le fer s'enfonçait,
Le sang coule; il se tait!...La chair fume; il
se tait!...

Et quand de ses bourreaux l'œuvre fut
achevée,
Tranquille et ferme, il dit : " La patrie est
sauvée ! "

Dandolo, Henrico, became eventually doge or chief magistrate of Venice, 12th century A.D.; the Emperor of the East was then Manuel Comnenus. *Venise*, Venice, a fortified city of Italy on the Adriatic, famous in history. *Byzance*, Byzantium, is here another name for Constantinople.

Le dîner de l'Abbé Cosson.

M. Delille, en avril 1786, étant à dîner chez Marmontel, son confrère, raconta ce qu'on va lire, au sujet des usages qui s'observaient à table dans la bonne compagnie. On parlait de la multitude de petites choses qu'un honnête homme est obligé de savoir dans le monde

pour ne pas courir le risque d'y être bafoué. "Elles sont innombrables, dit M. Delille, et ce qu'il y a de fâcheux, c'est que tout l'esprit du monde ne suffirait pas pour faire deviner ces importantes vétilles. Dernièrement, ajouta-t-il, l'abbé Cosson, professeur de belles lettres au collège Mazarin, me parla d'un dîner où il s'était trouvé quelques jours auparavant, avec des gens de cour, des cordons bleus, des maréchaux de France, chez l'abbé de Radonvilliers, à Versailles. "Je parie, lui dis-je, que vous avez commis cent incongruités." Comment donc ? reprit vivement l'abbé Cosson fort inquiet. Il me semble que j'ai fait la même chose que tout le monde.—Quelle présomption ! Je gage que vous n'avez fait rien comme personne. Mais voyons, je me bornerai au dîner. D'abord, que fîtes-vous de votre serviette en vous mettant à table ?—De ma serviette ? Je fis comme tout le monde : je la déployai, je l'étendis sur moi, et je l'attachai par un coin à ma boutonnière.—Eh bien ! mon cher, vous êtes le seul qui ayez fait cela ; on n'étale point sa serviette, on la laisse sur ses genoux. Et comment fîtes-vous pour manger votre soupe ?—Comme tout le monde, je pense : je pris ma cuiller d'une main et ma fourchette de l'autre...—Votre fourchette ! personne ne prend de fourchette pour manger sa soupe : mais poursuivons. Après votre soupe, que mangeâtes-vous ?—Un œuf frais.—Et que fîtes-vous de la coquille ?—Comme tout le monde, je la laissai au laquais qui me servait.—Sans la

casser ?—Sans la casser.—Eh bien, mon cher on ne mange jamais un œuf sans briser la coquille. Et après votre œuf ?—Je demandai du bouilli.—Du bouilli ! Personne ne se sert de cette expression ; on demande du bœuf et point du bouilli ; et après cet aliment ?—Je priai l'abbé de Radonvilliers de m'envoyer d'une très bonne volaille.—Malheureux ! de la volaille ! On demande du poulet, du chapon, de la poularde ! On ne parle de volaille qu'à la basse-cour. Mais vous ne dites rien de votre manière de demander à boire.—J'ai, comme tout le monde, demandé du champagne, du bordeaux, aux personnes qui en avaient devant elles.—Sachez donc qu'on demande du vin de Champagne, du vin de Bordeaux, continua M. Delille... Mais dites-moi quelque chose de la manière dont vous mangeâtes votre pain.—Certainement à la manière de tout le monde : je le coupai proprement avec mon couteau.—Eh ! en rompt son pain, on ne le coupe pas par tronçons. Le café, comment le prenez-vous ?—Eh ! pour le coup, comme tout le monde : il était brûlant, je le versai par petites parties de ma tasse dans ma soucoupe.—Eh bien ! vous fîtes comme ne fit sûrement personne : tout le monde boit son café dans sa tasse, et jamais dans sa soucoupe. Vous voyez donc, mon cher Cosson, que vous n'avez pas dit un mot, pas fait un mouvement qui ne fût contre l'usage.”—“L'abbé Cosson était confondu,” continue M. Delille. “Pendant six semaines, il s'informait à toutes les personnes qu'il

rencontrait, de quelques-uns des usages sur lesquels je l'avais critiqué."

Delille (Jacques), a French poet, died 1813. *Marmontel*, a distinguished French writer, died 1799. *Mazarin*, the famous cardinal and minister of Louis XIV. ; on his death-bed (1664) he endowed a college which was named after him. *Radonvilliers*, a French writer, died 1789. *Versailles*, 10 miles S.W. from Paris, formerly the residence of the kings of France. *Cordons bleus*, knights of the order of the Holy Ghost, so called from the colour of their badge.

La Conscience.

Minuit sonnait au clocher du village.

La lune, rayonnant dans un ciel sans nuage,
Se mirait dans l'étang; d'un souffle lan-
goureux

La brise par instants caressait le feuillage
Des bois silencieux.

Tout dormait—sauf un homme, amateur du
mystère,

Qui s'en allait dans le champ d'un voisin

Dérober des pommes de terre.

Il poussait sa brouette en montant le chemin ;

La roue, à chaque tour, criait en son langage :

" Nous serons pris, nous serons pris, nous
serons pris."

—" Non, non !" murmurait l'homme ; et les
chauves-souris

Disaient : " Si, si !" sur son passage,

Et tournoyaient avec de petits cris.

Il arrive pourtant, et remplit sa brouette.

Du haut d'un gros noyer voilà qu'une
chouette

Lui crie : " Hu, hu, je t'ai vu, je t'ai vu ! "

Notre coquin eut peur et prit la fuite ;
 Et la roue, en tournant plus vite,
 Lui chantait : " Tu seras pendu,
 " Tu seras pendu, tu seras pendu ! "
 Il rentra fort ému, mais sans autre aventure.
 Tandis qu'il cachait sa capture
 Il entendit un chat qui criait : " Miaou !
 " Oh, le filou ! oh, le filou ! "
 Il dormit mal, et rêva de gendarmes.
 Il s'éveillait, honteux de ses alarmes,
 Quand tout à coup le coq chanta : " Kirikiki !
 " Bien mal acquis, bien mal acquis ! "
 Il sortit furieux " Eh bien, oui, sale bête,
 " J'ai volé ; mais j'aurai ta langue avec ta
 tête ! "

Un voisin l'entendit, vite en secret conta
 La chose à sa voisine ; elle la rapporta
 A deux commères fort discrètes ;
 Bref, un ami courut avertir les sergents,
 Qui menèrent mon homme où vont les braves
 gens

Qui sans payer font leurs emplettes.
 Voilà mon conte, et je crois, mes amis,
 Qu'il justifie assez le titre que j'ai mis.

Remark that the French words, which the wheel-barrow and other witnesses of the theft are supposed to say, have been chosen to imitate their particular noise or cry ; this imitation does not always come out in the English translation. *Braves* is used here in the sense of honest, and ironically so.

L'enfant Perdu.

J'avais atteint le Louvre lorsqu'un rassemblement, formé près du parapet du pont, m'arrêta : on entourait un enfant d'environ

six ans qui pleurait. Je demandai la cause de ses larmes.—Il paraît qu'on l'a envoyé promener aux Tuileries, me dit un maçon qui revenait du travail, sa truelle à la main ; le domestique qui le conduisait a trouvé là des amis et a dit à l'enfant de l'attendre tandis qu'il allait prendre un canon ; mais il faut croire que la soif lui sera venue en buvant, car il n'a pas reparu, et le petit ne retrouve plus son logement.—Ne peut-on lui demander son nom et son adresse?—C'est ce qu'ils font depuis une heure ; mais tout ce qu'il peut dire, c'est qu'il s'appelle Charles, et que son père est M. Duval...Il y en a douze cents dans Paris, des Duval.—Ainsi il ne sait pas le nom du quartier où il demeure?—Ah bien, oui ! vous ne voyez donc pas que c'est un petit riche ? Ça n'est jamais sorti qu'en voiture, ou avec un laquais ; ça ne sait pas se conduire tout seul.—Ici, le maçon fut interrompu par quelques voix, qui s'élevaient au dessus des autres.—On ne peut pas le laisser sur le pavé, disaient les uns.—Les enleveurs d'enfants l'emporteraient, continuaient les autres.—Il faut l'emmener chez le commissaire.—Ou à la préfecture de police.—C'est cela ; viens, petit!—Mais l'enfant, que ces avertissements de danger et ces noms de police et de commissaire avaient effrayé, criait plus fort, en reculant vers le parapet. On s'efforçait en vain de le persuader : sa résistance grandissait avec son inquiétude, et les plus empressés commençaient à se décarager, lorsque la voix d'un petit garçon s'éleva au milieu du débat.—“Je le connais bien, moi, dit-il en

regardant l'enfant perdu; il est de notre quartier.—Quel quartier?—Là-bas, de l'autre côté des boulevards, rue des Magasins.—Et tu l'as déjà vu?—Oui, oui, c'est le fils de la grande maison au bout de la rue, où il y a une porte à grille avec des pointes dorées.” L'enfant redressa vivement la tête, et les larmes s'arrêtèrent dans ses yeux. Le petit garçon répondit à toutes les questions qui lui furent adressées, et donna des renseignements qui ne pouvaient laisser aucun doute. L'enfant égaré le comprit, car il s'approcha de lui comme s'il eût voulu se mettre sous sa protection. “Ainsi, tu peux le conduire à ses parents?” demanda le maçon, qui avait écouté l'explication avec un véritable intérêt. Ça ne sera pas malin, répliqua le petit garçon c'est ma route. — Alors tu t'en charges?—Il n'a qu'à venir.” Et reprenant le panier, qu'il avait déposé sur le trottoir, il se dirigea vers la poterne du Louvre. L'enfant perdu le suivit. “Purvu qu'il le conduise bien! dis-je en les voyant s'éloigner.—Soyez donc calme, reprit le maçon; le petit en blouse a le même âge que l'autre; mais, comme on dit, ça connaît les couleurs; la misère, voyez-vous, est une fameuse maîtresse d'école!”

Louvre, formerly a palace, now a splendid museum in Paris. *Tuileries*, a large garden belonging to the palace of that name which was burnt down during the insurrection in Paris, 1871. *Ah, bien, oui!* ‘Not likely!’ or something equivalent. *Un petit riche*, the child of a rich man. *Ça*, ‘it,’ instead of *il*, a contemptuous way of speaking of a person. *Ça ne sera pas malin*, nothing easier. *Ça connaît les couleurs*, he knows a thing or two, he knows black from white.

La Lune.

Désirer l'impossible est une erreur commune
Chez notre folle humanité.

“ Je veux qu'on me donne la lune ! ”

Criaient un bébé fort gâté.

Sa petite maman, pour tout l'or de la terre,

Aurait voulu le satisfaire ;

La grand'mère faillit aller chez les marchands

Demander s'ils vendaient des lunes pour
enfants :

Le père qui survint était un peu plus sage :

“ Viens avec moi, dit-il, je vais te la
donner.

Sans en demander davantage,

Le petit se laissa tout de suite emmener.

Une montagne était voisine :

“ Viens, la lune est là-haut, dit le père.—
On monta.

Au bout de quelque temps le marmot s'arrêta :

“ Papa, c'est-il bien loin ? ”

“ Oui, fort loin ! ” — On chemine.

— “ Je suis bien fatigué, papa, ” reprend
l'enfant.

— “ Alors tu n'en veux plus ? ” Un silence
éloquent

Fut la seule réponse. On revint à la brune ;

Mais à l'astre des nuits Bébé garda rancune

Et jamais plus n'en parla.

Qui de nous n'a tenté d'aller chercher la lune
Et n'en est revenu comme ce petit-là ?

Adieu !

Adieu est un de ces mots heureux inventés par le cœur. Je vous quitte, je ne serai plus là pour prendre ma part de vos joies et de vos peines, pour veiller sur vous, je vous recommande à Dieu : qu'il vous protège et vous conserve à ceux qui vous aiment. Mais *adieu* veut dire : il faut nous éloigner : nous nous aimerons toujours, et peut-être nous ne nous reverrons plus. Aussi, cette parole, quoique bonne et consolante, est toujours une parole de tristesse. On dit tous les jours, on écrit même souvent dans les romans et au théâtre : *Adieu, ou plutôt...au revoir!*—Il semble que le mot *adieu* soit réservé pour les longues absences ou les séparations éternelles. Pourquoi cela ? Pourquoi ne pas dire *adieu* le soir à ceux qu'on doit retrouver le lendemain ?—On ne peut mieux exprimer à un ami l'espoir et le désir de le revoir qu'en le plaçant, toutes les fois qu'on le quitte, sous la protection de Dieu.—Ainsi, mon lecteur, *au revoir et à Dieu.*

Veut dire means, signifies. *Tous les jours*, every day, daily. *Au revoir*, we shall meet again, good bye for the present ; *adieu*, or rather...*au revoir.* *Toutes les fois*, every time.

SELECTIONS FOR FRENCH COMPOSITION.

*N.B.—The words and expressions will be found
in the English-French Vocabulary.*

A big Cabbage.

“Yesterday,” said John to Peter, “I saw a cabbage as big as a house.” “And I,” said Peter to John, “I saw a saucepan as big as a church this morning, and I suppose it has been made to cook the big cabbage you saw.”

*** Baron Munchausen.**

Baron Munchausen was very strong. One day, on horseback, he was crossing a marsh, when suddenly his horse sank, and he sank with it up to his neck. The baron, however, did not lose his presence of mind; he held his horse tight between his legs, seized himself by the hair, and by a vigorous effort pulled himself and his horse out of the mire.

* Use the article.

The inquisitive Courtier.

King Henry the Fourth was preparing for war; but nobody knew against whom he was going to fight. A very inquisitive courtier, finding himself alone with the king, asked him the name of his enemy. "Can you keep a secret?" inquired Henry. "Certainly, Sire," answered the courtier. "So can I," * said the king.

•

Condemned to Die.

Punch, the king's jester, had committed a great crime, and had been condemned to death. The king, much grieved, sent for Punch, and when Punch had arrived, he said to him: "Punch, I cannot save you from death, but I desire that you should choose the kind of death which you prefer." "O merciful king," exclaimed Punch, let me die of old age!" We all know that Punch is not dead yet.

N.B.—The king must speak to Punch, in French, in the second person singular.

Triboulet.

Francis the First had a very clever fool called Triboulet. The courtiers hated Triboulet because he often made the king laugh at their expense. One of † them, one day,

•

* *Et moi aussi.*

† *d'entre.*

threatened to* kill the fool, and the fool complained to the king. "Fear nothing," said his Majesty; "if that lord killed you, he would die immediately after you." "I would be less uneasy, if he died before me," replied Triboulet.

A pair of Spectacles. ,

A good peasant who had never been to school, and did† not know his alphabet, remarked that the parson in‡ church put on spectacles to read the service. Wishing to be able to read too, he went to the neighbouring town, bought a newspaper, and afterwards entered a shop where they sold spectacles, and said: "Give me a pair of spectacles." The shopman§ gave him a pair. The peasant put them on, and tried to read his newspaper, but could not do it. "This pair is bad," said he; "give me § a better one." The shopman gave him several pairs of spectacles one after another, and as not one of them satisfied his customer, he grew impatient, and muttered between his teeth: "I believe he does not know how to¶ read." "If I knew how to read," retorted the peasant, who had heard him, "I should not require spectacles."

* *de.* † Do not translate "did." ‡ *℥.* § Put in *en.*

¶ Do not translate "how to."

FRENCH-ENGLISH VOCABULARY.

A

a, *from avoir.*

a. *at, to.*

a (il y), *there is, there are.*

abat-jour, *shade.*

abattre, *to bring down.*

abbé, *abbot.*

abonder, *to abound.*

abord (d'), *first, to begin with.*

absence, *absence.*

abstenir (s'), *to abstain.*

abstraire, *to abstract.*

abuser (de), *to abuse.*

académie, *academy.*

accent, *tone.*

accepter, *to accept.*

accessible à, *amenable to.*

accident, *accident.*

accompagner, *accompany.*

accourir, *to run up to.*

accours, *from accourir.*

accroire (faire), *to make (one) believe.*

accroître, *to increase.*

accueillir, *to receive.*

acheter, *to buy.*

achevée, *ended.*

achever, *to finish.*

acquis (bien mal), *ill-gotten gain.*

acte, *act.*

action, *action.*

addition, *addition, sum.*

adieu, *farewell, God speed.*

admettre, *to admit.*

admirable, *admirable.*

adopter, *to adopt.*

adresse, *address.*

adresser, *to address.*

affaire, *business.*

affaire (avoir — à) *to have to do with.*

afin de, *in order to.*

âge, *age.*

âgé, *aged.*

agent, *agent.*

agir, *to act.*

agir (s'), *to be the matter.*

agrément, *pleasure.*

ah! ah!

ai, *from avoir.*

aider, *to assist.*

aille (aller), *to go.*

aimable, *amiable.*

aiment (ils), *they love.*

aimer, *to love, to like.*

ainsi, *so, thus, then.*

ainsi que, *as.*

air, *air, look.*

aise (à ton)! *please yourself!*

aisément, *easily.*

ait, *from avoir.*

ajouter, *to add.*

à la ligne, *a new line.*

alarmes, *fears.*

Alcibiade, *Alcibiades.*

aliment, *food.*

aller (s'en), *to go (away).*

aller, *to go.*

allons! *come!*

allumette, *match.*

alors, *then.*

amateur, *amateur.*

amener, *to bring.*

amertume, *bitterness.*

ami, *friend.*

à moins que, *unless.*

amour, *love.*

amuser (s'), *to enjoy oneself.*

amuser, *to amuse.*

an, *year.*

ananas, *pine-apple.*

ancêtres, *ancestors.*

anglais, *English.*

animal, *animal.*

annoncer, *announce.*

à peine, *scarcely.*

apparaître, *to appear.*

appartenir, *to belong.*

appeler, *to call.*

appeler (s'), *to be called.*

applaudir, *to applaud.*

appliquer, *to apply.*

apporter, *to bring.*

apprendrais, *from apprendre, to learn.*

apprendre, *to learn.*

approcher (s'), *to draw near.*

après, *after.*

arbre, *tree.*

ardent, *ardent, eager.*

ardente, *burning.*

ardeur, *ardour.*

ardoise, *slate.*

argent, *money.*

armé, *armed.*

armée, *army.*

armoire, *cupboard.*

arranger (s'), *to manage.*

arrêter, *to stop.*

arriver, *to arrive, to happen.*

arroser, *to water.*

asseoir, *to sea*

assez, *enough (rather)*.
 assister, *to be present*.
 assurément, *assuredly*.
 astre, *luminary*.
 astreindre, *to subject*.
 Athéniens, *Athenians*.
 attacher, *to tie, to fasten*.
 atteindre, *to reach*.
 atteint, *from atteindre*.
 attendre, *to wait*.
 attention, *attention*.
 au, *to or at the*.
 aucun (ne), *not ... any*.
 au dessus, *above*.
 au figuré, *figuratively*.
 aujourd'hui, *to-day*.
 auparavant, *before*.
 auprès, *near to*.
 aurai, *from avoir*.
 aurais (j'), *would have*.
 aurais (tu), *wouldst have*.
 aussi, *also, therefore*.
 aussi que... *as ... as*.
 aussitôt, *immediately*.
 aussitôt que, *as soon as*.
 automne, *autumn*.
 autre, *other*.
 autrefois, *formerly*.
 auxiliaire, *auxiliary*.
 avaient, *from avoir*.
 avais, *from avoir*.
 avait, *from avoir*.
 avancement, *promotion*.
 avant (en), *forward*.
 avant-hier, *day before yesterday*.
 avec, *with*.
 aventure, *adventure*.
 avertir, *to inform*.
 avertissements, *warnings*.
 aviser (s'), *to take it into one's head*.
 avocat, *lawyer*.
 avoir, *to have*.
 avril, *April*.
 ayez, *from avoir*.

B

bafouer, *to scoff at, to laugh at*.
 balancer, *to swing*.
 ballon, *air-ball, balloon*.
 bambin, *brat*.
 bas (là), *yonder*.
 basse-cour, *poultry-yard*.
 battre (se), *to fight*.
 béante, *gaping, wide open*.
 beau, *fine, handsome*.
 beaucoup, *much, very much*.
 bébé, *baby*.
 bec, *beak, little mouth*.
 bel, *from beau*.
 belles-lettres, *literature*.
 besoin, *need*.
 bête, *beast*.
 bêtise, *stupidity*.
 beurre, *butter*.
 bibliothèque, *library*.
 bien, *properly*.
 bien, *well, very (guite)*.
 bien, *indeed*.
 bientôt, *soon*.
 billet, *note, I.O.U.*.
 blâmer, *to blame*.
 blanche, *white*.
 blouse, *blouse, smock-frock*.
 bœuf, *beef*.
 boire, *to drink*.
 bois, *wood*.
 boit, *from boire*.
 bon, *bonne, good*.
 bonheur, *happiness*.
 bonjour, *good day, good morning*.
 boune, -s, *maid-servant*.
 Bordeaux, *the chief city of a wine-growing district in France*.
 bordeaux, *a French wine, claret*.
 borne, *limit*.
 borner (se), *to confine oneself*.
 bouche, *mouth*.

bougie, *candle*.
 bouilli, *boiled beef*.
 boulevards, *boulevards*.
 bourreau, *executioner, torturer*.
 bourse, *purse*.
 bousculer, *to hustle about*.
 bout, *end*.
 bouteille, *bottle*.
 boutonnière, *button-hole*.
 braire, *to bray*.
 branche, *branch*.
 brandir, *to brandish*.
 brave, *brave, honest*.
 bref, *findly*.
 Brésil (le), *Brazil*.
 brise, *breeze*.
 briser, *to break*.
 brodequin, *lace-boot, buskin*.
 brevette, *wheel-barrow*.
 bruit, *noise*.
 brûlant, *burning*.
 brûler, *to burn*.
 brune, *dusk of the evening*.
 Bruxelles, *Brussels*.
 buffet, *sideboard*.
 buvant, *from boire*.

C

c', *for ce*.
 ça, *that, it*.
 cacher, *to hide*.
 café, *coffee*.
 cahier, *exercise book*.
 calme, *calm*.
 camarade, *school-fellow, playmate*.
 canif, *penknife*.
 canon, *a glass, a quarter of a pint*.
 cantatrice, *singer (f.)*.
 capable, *capable*.
 capitaine, *captain*.
 captif, *captivity*.
 capture, *capture*.
 car, *for, because*.
 caractériser, *characterise, describe*.
 caresser, *to caress*.

carte postale, <i>postcard</i> .	chemin, <i>road, way</i> .	commission, <i>commis-</i>
casser, <i>to break</i> .	cheminer, <i>to walk</i> .	sion
cause, <i>cause</i> .	chemin-de-fer, <i>railway</i> .	commune, <i>common</i> .
causer, <i>to talk, to chat</i> .	cher, <i>dear, precious</i> :	compagnie, <i>company</i> .
ce, <i>it, this, that</i> .	mon cher, <i>my good</i>	comparaître, <i>to appear</i>
ceindre, <i>to surround</i> .	fellow.	(<i>a law term</i>)
cela, <i>that</i> .	chère, <i>dear</i> .	comparer, <i>to compare</i> .
celle, <i>that</i> .	chercher, <i>to seek, to</i>	compartiment, <i>railway</i>
celle-là, <i>that one</i> .	fetch.	carriage.
cent, <i>hundred, a great</i>	chercher à, <i>to try to</i> .	complaire (se), <i>to de-</i>
many.	chérir, <i>to love</i> .	light in.
centime, <i>centime, one</i>	chez, <i>at the house of, at</i>	compliment, <i>compliment</i> .
tenth of a penny.	with.	composer (se), <i>to be</i>
certain, <i>certain</i> .	chien, <i>dog</i> .	composed.
certainement, <i>certainly</i> .	chose, <i>thing</i> .	comprendre, <i>to under-</i>
ces, <i>these, those</i> .	chouette, <i>owl</i> .	stand.
césar, <i>emperor</i> .	chou-fleur, <i>cauliflower</i>	compris (comprendre),
cette, <i>this, that</i> .	choux, <i>cabbages</i> .	<i>to understand</i> .
ceux, <i>those</i> .	chut! <i>hush!</i>	comprit, <i>from com-</i>
chacun, <i>each</i> .	cicatrice, <i>scar</i> .	prendre.
chagrin, <i>grief</i> .	ciel, <i>sky</i> .	compromettre, <i>to com-</i>
chagrin, <i>shagreen</i> .	cinq, <i>five</i> .	promise, <i>to endanger</i> .
chair, <i>flesh</i> .	cinquante, <i>fifty</i> .	compte, <i>account</i> .
chaise, <i>chair</i> .	circonscrire, <i>to circum-</i>	compter, <i>to count</i> .
chaleur, <i>heat</i> .	scribe.	comté, <i>county</i> .
chambertin, <i>chamber-</i>	circonvenir <i>to circum-</i>	concert, <i>concert</i> .
lin (wine).	vent.	concourir, <i>to concour</i> .
chambre, <i>room</i> .	classe, <i>class</i> .	conduire, <i>to lead</i> .
champ, <i>field</i> .	clé, <i>key</i> .	conduire (se), <i>to behave,</i>
Champagne, <i>a wine-</i>	clocher, <i>bell-tower</i> .	<i>to take care of oneself</i> .
growing province in	belfry.	conduisait, <i>from con-</i>
France.	close, <i>to shut</i> .	duire.
champagne, <i>a French</i>	closes, <i>shut</i> .	conduisit (conduire), <i>to</i>
wine.	cœur, <i>heart</i> .	<i>conduct, to take</i> .
changement, <i>change</i> .	coffre-fort, <i>safe</i> .	confiance, <i>confidence</i> .
changer, <i>to change</i> .	coin, <i>corner</i> .	confondu, <i>confused</i> ,
chanter, <i>to sing</i> .	colère, <i>anger</i> .	abashed.
chapitre, <i>chapter</i> .	collaboratrice, <i>assis-</i>	confrère, <i>colleague</i> .
chapon, <i>capon</i> .	tant.	congé, <i>holiday</i> .
chaque, <i>each, every</i> .	collège, <i>college, school</i> .	conjoindre, <i>to unite</i> .
charger (se) de, <i>to</i>	combattre, <i>to fight</i> .	connais, <i>from con-</i>
undertake.	combien, <i>how much, at</i>	naitre.
charges (tu t'en), <i>you</i>	how much.	connaissait, <i>from con-</i>
will take charge of	comédie, <i>comedy</i> .	naitre.
him.	comme, <i>as, like, how</i> .	connaît, <i>from con-</i>
charlatan, <i>quack</i> .	commencement, <i>begin-</i>	naitre.
Charles, <i>a proper name</i> .	ning.	connaître, <i>to know</i> .
charmant, <i>charming</i> .	commencer, <i>to begin</i> .	conquérir, <i>conquer</i> .
chat, <i>cat</i> .	comment, <i>how</i> .	conscience, <i>conscience</i> .
chaud, <i>warm</i> .	commère, <i>gossip</i> .	conseil, <i>advice</i> .
chauffer, <i>to warm</i> .	commettre, <i>to commit</i> .	conseiller, <i>to advise</i> .
chauve-souris, <i>bat</i> .	commis, <i>committed</i> .	conseillers, <i>advisers</i> .
chef-d'œuvre, <i>master-</i>	commissaire, <i>superin-</i>	consens, <i>consent</i> .
piece.	tendent of police.	

consentir, *to consent*.
 conserver, *to keep*.
 considérer, *to consider*.
 consolante, *comforting*.
 constamment, *constantly*.
 construire, *to build*.
 consulter, *to consult*.
 conte, *tale*.
 contempler, *to behold*.
 contenir, *to contain*.
 content, *contented, satisfied*.
 conter, *to relate*.
 continuer, *to continue, to go on*.
 contraindre, *to compel*.
 contre, *against*.
 contrefaire, *to counterfeit*.
 convaincre, *to convince*.
 convenir, *to suit (with avoir)*.
 convenir, *to agree (with être)*.
 coq, *cock*.
 coquille, *shell*.
 coquin, *rogue*.
 cordon, *rope (for a bell)*.
 cordons bleus, *members of the Order of the Holy Ghost; they wore a blue band*.
 Cosson, *a proper name*.
 côte, *side*.
 côté, *direction*.
 cou, *neck*.
 couler, *to run*.
 couleur, *colour*.
 coup (pour le), *this time*.
 coup (tout à), *suddenly*.
 couper, *to cut*.
 cour, *court*.
 courage, *courage*.
 courez (courir), *to run*.
 courir, *to run*.
 cours, *from courir*.
 courut, *from courir*.
 cousin, *cousin*.
 couteau, *knife*.
 coûter, *to cost*.
 Couture, *a proper name*.

couverte (couvrir, *to cover*).
 couverts, *spoons and forks*.
 couvrir, *to cover*.
 craints (craindre, *to fear*).
 cravate, *neck-tie*.
 crayon, *pencil*.
 créa, *created*.
 créer, *to create*.
 cri, *cry*.
 crier, *to shout, to cry, to squeak*.
 critiquer, *to criticise*.
 croie (croire, *to believe*).
 croire, *to believe*.
 crois, *believe*.
 croit (croître), *to grow*.
 croit (croire, *to believe*).
 croyais, *from croire*.
 cueillez (cueillir, *to pluck*).
 cuiller, *spoon*.
 cuire, *to cook*.
 cuisse, *leg*.

D

d', *for de*.
 d'abord, *first, to begin with*.
 dame, *lady*.
 danger, *danger*.
 dans, *in*.
 davantage, *more*.
 de, *of, from*.
 dé, *thimble*.
 débat, *discussion*.
 débattre, *to debate*.
 décéder, *to die*.
 décembre, *December*.
 décevant, *deceptive*.
 décevoir, *to deceive*.
 découdre, *to unsew*.
 décourager (se), *to lose courage*.
 découvrir, *discovers*.
 découvrir, *to discover*.
 de crainte que, *for fear that, lest*.
 décrire, *to describe*.
 décroire, *to disbelieve*.

décroître, *to decrease*.
 dédire (se), *to retract*.
 déduire, *to deduct*.
 défaire, *to undo*.
 défaire (se), *to get rid of*.
 défier (se) de, *to mistrust*.
 degré, *degree*.
 déjà, *already, before*.
 déjeuner, *breakfast*.
 déjoindre, *disjoin*.
 délicate, *delicate*.
 demain, *to-morrow*.
 demander, *to ask*.
 démentir, *to contradict*.
 démettre, *to put out of joint, to dismiss*.
 demeurer, *to dwell, to live*.
 demi, *half*.
 demi-kilo, *half a kilogramme, about 1lb*.
 département, *department*.
 départir, *to distribute*.
 partir (se), *to desist*.
 dépêcher (se), *to make haste*.
 dépeindre, *to depict*.
 déplaire, *to displease*.
 déployer, *to unfold*.
 déplu (déplaire à, *to displease*).
 déposer, *to deposit, to put down*.
 dépouiller, *to strip*.
 depuis, *since, ago*.
 député, *representative ambassador*.
 dernier, *last*.
 dernièrement, *lately*.
 dérober, *to steal*.
 des, *of the, some*.
 désapprendre, *to unlearn*.
 descendre, *to come down, to suit*.
 désenchantement, *disenchantment*.
 désespérer (se), *to grow despairing*.
 désir, *desire*.
 désirer, *to wish*.

désobéissance, *disobedience*.

désolé, *grieved*.

desservir, *to thwart*, also *to remove the cloth*.

destinée, *destined*.

détail, *detail*.

déteindre, *to fade*, *to lose its colour*.

détenir, *to detain*.

détruire, *to destroy*.

dette, *debt*.

deux, *two*.

devant, *before*.

développement, *plot (of a play)*.

devenir, *to become*.

devenu, *become*.

dévetir, *to unclothe*.

deviner, *guess*.

devoir (s), *duty*.

devoir, *to owe*, *to have to*, *must*.

diamants, *diamonds*.

d'ici, *from now*.

dicte, *dictated*, *inspired*.

dictionnaire, *dictionary*.

Dien, *God*.

difficile, *difficult*.

digne, *worthy*.

dindon, *turkey*.

dîner, *dinner*.

diner, *to dine*.

dire, *to say*, *to tell*.

diriger (se), *to walk in the direction*.

diront, *will say*.

dis, *from dire*.

disait, *said*.

disconvenir, *to deny*.

discourir, *to discourse*.

discret, *discreet*.

disent (dire, *to say*).

disjoindre, *to disjoin*.

disparaître, *to disappear*.

disparut, *from disparaître*.

distrainre, *to divert*.

dit (dire, *to say*).

dites, *tell (from dire)*.

dix, *ten*.

dix-huit, *eighteen*.

docteur, *doctor*.

doigt, *finger, toe*.

dois (devoir, *to owe*).

doit, *must*.

doivent (devoir, *to be obliged to*).

domestique, *servant*.

don, *gift*.

donc, *then*, *do (with an imperative)*.

donner, *to give*.

donneur, *giver*.

dont, *whose*, *from which*, *in which*.

dorées, *gilt*.

dormir, *to sleep*.

doute, *doubt*.

douze, *twelve*.

dramatique, *dramatic*.

drame, *drama*.

droite, *right*.

du, *of the*.

dû (devoir, *to owe*, *to be obliged to*).

Duval, *a proper name*.

E

ébattre (s'), *to disport oneself*.

éblouissant, *dazzling*.

éblouissement, *dizziness*.

ébouillir, *to boil away*.

écarpillé, *wide open*.

échoir, *to become due*.

éclatait, *burst out*.

éclore, *to be hatched*.

école, *school*.

éconduire, *to refuse*, *to bow out*.

écouter, *to listen*.

écraser, *to crush*.

écrial-je (m'), *I exclaimed*.

écrier (s'), *to exclaim*.

écrire, *to write*.

écrit, *from écrire*.

écriture, *writing*.

écrivez (écrire, *to write*).

écumer, *to foam*.

édition, *edition*.

éducation, *education*.

effacer, *to wipe out*.

efforcer (s'), *to endeavor*.

effrayer, *to frighten*.

égaré, *lost*.

église, *church*.

eh! oh!

eh bien! *well!*

élancer (s'), *to rush forward*.

électrique, *electric*.

élève, *pupil, scholar*.

élevé, *educated*.

élever (s'), *to rise*.

élire, *to elect*.

elle, *she, it*.

elles, *they, them*.

éloigner (s'), *to go away*.

éloquent, *eloquent*.

émeraudes, *emeralds*.

émerveille, *amazed*.

émettre, *to issue*.

emmener, *take (away)*, *to lead away*.

émoudre, *to grind*, *i.e. to sharpen*.

émouvoir, *to move*.

émouvoir (s'), *to be moved*.

empêcher, *to prevent*.

empereur, *emperor*.

emplette, *purchase*.

employer, *to employ*.

emporter, *to carry away*.

empreindre, *to imprint*, *to stamp*.

empresse, *eager*.

emprunter, *to borrow*.

ému, *affected, nervous*.

en, *of it, of them, some*.

en (prep.), *in, whilst*.

en avant, *forward*.

en cas que, *in case that*.

encore, *still, again, yet*.

encourir, *to incur*.

encre, *ink*.

endormir, *to send to sleep*.

endormir (s'), *to go to sleep*.

enfant, *child*.

enfin, *at last*.
 enfoncer (s'), *to penetrate*.
 enfreindre, *to infringe*.
 enfuir (s'), *to flee*.
 engouffrer (s'), *to be engulfed*.
 enleveur d'enfants, *child-stealer*.
 enquérir (s'), *to enquire*.
 en retard, *late, behind time*.
 enrichir, *to enrich*.
 enseigner, *to teach*.
 ensemble, *together*.
 ensuivre (s'), *to follow, to result*.
 entendre, *from entendre*.
 entendre, *to hear*.
 enthousiasme, *rapture*.
 entier, *whole, entire*.
 en titre, *title*.
 entourer, *to surround*.
 entracte, *interval*.
 entre, *among*.
 entremettre (s'), *to interfere*.
 entre-nuire (s'), *to injure each other*.
 entreprendre, *to undertake*.
 entrer, *to enter*.
 entretenir, *to entertain, to keep*.
 entretenir (s'), *to talk*.
 entretiendront (s'), *will talk*.
 entrevoir, *to catch sight of*.
 entr'ouvrir, *to put ajar*.
 envie, *wish, desire*.
 environ, *about*.
 envoyer, *to send*.
 épée, *sword*.
 épeler, *to spell*.
 épuisé, *out of print*.
 équivaloir, *to be equivalent*.
 erreur, *error, mistake*.
 esclave, *slave*.
 espace, *space (air)*.
 Espagne, *Spain*.
 espérance, *hope*.

espérer, *to hope*.
 espoir, *hope*.
 esprit, *wit, intelligence*.
 essoufflé, *out of breath*.
 est, *is*.
 et, *and*.
 étaient, *from être*.
 était, *was*.
 étaler, *to spread out*.
 étang, *pond*.
 étant, *from être*.
 été, *been*.
 été, *summer*.
 éteindra, *will extinguish*.
 éteindre, *to extinguish*.
 étendis, *from étendre*.
 étendre, *to spread out*.
 éternel, *everlasting*.
 êtes, *are*.
 étinceler, *to sparkle*.
 étonné, *astonished*.
 étourdi, *stupefied*.
 être, *to be*.
 étroits, *narrow*.
 étudier, *to study*.
 est, *from avoir*.
 évanoui, *vanished, gone*.
 éveiller (s'), *to awake*.
 éventail, *fan*.
 excellent, *excellent*.
 exclure, *to exclude*.
 exemple, *example*.
 explication, *explication*.
 expression, *expression*.
 exprimer, *to express*.
 extraire, *to extract*.

F

fabriquer, *to make*.
 face (en), *opposite, in front*.
 fâcheux, *verging*.
 facile, *easy*.
 facilement, *easily*.
 faillir, *to be on the point of*.
 faim (avoir), *to be hungry*.
 faire, *to make, to do, to order a thing to be done*.

fais (faire, *to do*).
 faisait, *made, did*.
 faisan, *pheasant*.
 fait, *from faire*.
 faites (faire, *to do*).
 falloir (s'en), *to be far from, to be wanting*.
 fallu (falloir, *to be obliged to*).
 fameuse, *famous*.
 famille, *family*.
 fantôme, *phantom*.
 fasse, *may do*.
 fassions, *make, may make*.
 fatigué, *tired*.
 faudra (falloir, *to be obliged to*).
 faut (il), *it is necessary, I, you, &c., must*.
 faute, *fault, mistake*.
 feindre, *to feign*.
 femme, *wife, woman*.
 fenêtre, *window*.
 fer, *iron*.
 feriez (faire, *to do*).
 ferme, *firm, resolute*.
 fermer, *to close*.
 feront (faire, *to do, to make*).
 feu, *fire*.
 feuillage, *foliage*.
 fi ! *fie !*
 ficelle, *string*.
 fidèle, *faithful*.
 fi donc ! *fie !*
 fier, *proud*.
 fier (se) à, *to trust to*.
 fière, *proud*.
 fil, *thread*.
 fille, *daughter*.
 filou, *thief*.
 fils, *son*.
 fin, *fine, cunning*.
 fit, *from faire*.
 fites, *from faire*.
 fixement, *fixedly*.
 flamme, *flame*.
 flatter, *to flatter*.
 flétrir, *to disgrace*.
 fleur, *flower*.
 flotter, *waving*.
 fois, *time*.
 folie, *folly*.

folle, *foolish*.
follement, *madly*.
fond, *bottom*.
font, *from faire*.
force, *strength*.
forfaire, *to forfeit*.
former, *to form*.
fort, *very, much*.
fort, *strongly, loud*.
fou, *madman*.
fouiller, *to search*.
foulard, *silk handkerchief*.
fourchette, *fork*.
fournir, *to provide, to furnish*.
fournissait, *from fournir*.
fraîs, *fresh, new-laid*.
franc, *franc*.
France, *France*.
français, *French*.
frapper, *to knock, to strike, to befall*.
frère, *brother*.
froid, *cold*.
front, *forehead*.
fruit, *fruit*.
fugitif, *fugitive*.
suite, *flight*.
fumée, *smoke, steam*.
fumer, *to smoke*.
furent, *from être*.
fureur, *passion*.
furieux, *furious*.
fût, *from être*.

G

gager, *to bet*.
gagner, *to gain, to come over*.
gants, *gloves*.
garçon, *boy*.
garçonnet, *little lad*.
garder, *to keep*.
gare! *mind*.
garniture, *set*.
garrotter, *to bind*.
gâté, *spoiled*.
gâteau, *cake*.
geindre, *to moan*.

gênant, *tiresome*.
gendarme, *policeman*.
général, *general*.
générosité, *generosity*.
genou, *knee*.
genre, *gender, kind*.
gens, *people*.
gentilhomme, *nobleman*.
glisser, *to slip*.
gonflé, *inflated*.
goût, *taste*.
grace, *gracefulness*.
gracieux, *graceful*.
grand, *tall, big, great*.
grandir, *increase*.
grand-mère, *grandmother*.
grec, *Greek*.
grève, *strike*.
grille, *iron, railing*.
grouder, *to scold*.
gros, *big*.
grossier, *gross*.
guerre, *war*.
guillemets, *inverted commas*.

H

habiller (s'), *to dress*.
habit, *coat*.
hache, *axe*.
haine, *hatred*.
hameçon, *fish hook*.
hammeton, *cockchafer*.
haricot, *haricot*.
hâter (se), *to hasten*.
hâte-toi, *make haste*.
haut, *high*.
haut, *top*.
haut (là-), *up there*.
hauteur, *height*.
hélas! *alas!*
héroïne, *heroine*.
héroïsme, *heroism*.
héros, *hero*.
heure, *hour, o'clock*.
heureusement, *fortunately*.
heureux, *happy*.
hier, *yesterday*.
hisser, *to hoist*.
histoire, *story*.

Hoche, *a proper name*.
homme, *man*.
honnête, *honest*.
honte, *shame*.
honteux, *ashamed*.
houx, *holly*.
hu, hu (*a sound imitating the hooting of the owl*).
huit, *eight*.
humain, *human*.
humeur, *humour*.

I

ici, *here*.
idole, *idol*.
ignorance, *ignorance*.
ignorant, *ignorant*.
ignorer, *not to know*.
il, *he, it*.
il est, *there is, there are, he or it is*.
illusions, *illusions*.
ils, *they*.
image, *image*.
imagination, *imagination*.
impétueux, *violent*.
important, *important*.
importe (il), *it is important*.
imposer (à), *to impose upon*.
impossible, *impossible*.
incongruité, *impropriety*.
inconnu, *unknown*.
indépendance, *independence*.
indigner (s'), *to be indignant*.
individu, *individual*.
induire, *to induce*.
indulgent, *indulgent*.
influence, *influence*.
informer (s'), *to ask*.
ingénieux, *ingenious*.
innombrables, *innumerable*.
inquiet, *uneasy*.
inquiétude, *uneasiness*.
inscrire, *to inscribe*.

insignifiant, *insignificant*.

instant, *instant*.

instants (par), *from time to time*.

instinctivement, *instinctively*.

institutrice, *governess*.

instruire, *to instruct*.

instrument, *instrument*.

insupportable, *insupportable*.

intention, *intention*.

interdire, *to forbid*.

intéresse, *selfish*.

intérêt, *interest, concern*.

intérieur, *inside*.

interrompre, *to interrupt*.

interrompu, *from interrupt*.

intervenir, *to interfere*.

introduire, *to introduce, to show a person in*.

inutile, *useless*.

inventer, *to invent*.

inviter, *to invite*.

iras (aller, to go).

irrésistible, *irresistible*.

irriter, *to excite*.

J

j' for *je*.

jamais, *ever*.

jamais (ne...), *never*.

jambe, *leg*.

jardin, *garden*.

je, *I*.

Jean, *John*.

jeter, *to throw*.

jeu, *play*.

jeune, *young*.

jeux, *game, play*.

joie, *joy*.

joli, *pretty*.

Josse, *a proper name*.

jouet, *toy*.

jour, *day, light*.

journal, *newspaper*.

joyeux, *joyful*.

jusqu'à, *as far as*.

jurer, *to judge*.

juste, *rightly, to the point*.

justifier, *to justify*.

L

l' for *le and la*.

la, *the, it*.

là, *there*.

là-bas, *yonder*.

là-haut, *up there*.

laisser, *to leave, to let*.

lame, *blade*.

lampe, *lamp*.

lancer, *to fling*.

langage, *language*.

langoureux, *languid*.

langue, *language, tongue*.

laquais, *footman*.

large, *wide*.

largeur, *width*.

larme, *tear*.

Lazare, *Lazarus*.

le, *the, him*.

lecteur, *reader*.

lectrice, *lady reader*.

lecture, *reading*.

léger, *light*.

légèrement, *lightly*.

le leur, *theirs*.

lendemain, *morrow, next day*.

les, *the, them*.

lesquels, *which*.

lettre, *letter*.

lettres (belles), *literature*.

leur, *them, to them, their*.

leurs, *their*.

lever (se), *to rise*.

lieu (au), *instead*.

ligue, *league*.

lion, *lion*.

lire, *to read*.

lisait (lire, to read).

lisez, *read*.

lit, *reads*.

livre, *franc, pound*.

logement, *home, dwelling*.

loin, *far*.

Londres, *London*.

long, *long*.

longtemps, *long time*.

longue (long), *long*.

lorsque, *when*.

louer, *to praise*.

Louvre, *a museum in Paris*.

Lucinde, *a proper name*.

lui, *him, to him, her, to her*.

lui-même, *himself*.

luisante, *glossy*.

lundi, *Monday*.

lune, *moon*.

l'une et l'autre, *both*.

lunettes, *spectacles*.

M

M. for *monsieur*.

mi' for *me*.

ma, *my*.

maçon, *mason*.

madame, *the lady, madame, Mrs*.

mademoiselle, *miss*.

Magasins (rue des), *name of a street*.

magnifique, *magnificent*.

main, *hand*.

maintenant, *now, at present*.

maintenir, *to maintain*.

mais, *but*.

maison, *house*.

maître, *master*.

maîtresse, *mistress*.

majesté, *majesty*.

mal, *ill, badly*.

malade, *ill*.

malgré, *in spite of*.

malheur, *misfortune*.

malheureux, *unhappy man*.

malin, *sharp, cunning*.

maman, *mamma*.

manger, *eat*.

manière, *manner, way*.

manquer, *to miss*.

marchand, *dealer, shop keeper*.

marchandise, *wares, stock.*
 marche, *step.*
 marcher, *to walk.*
 maréchal, *marshal.*
 marier (se), *to get married.*
 marmot, *brat.*
 matière, *matter.*
 matin, *morning.*
 matinée, *morning.*
 mauvais, *bad.*
 maxime, *maxim.*
 me, *me, to me, myself.*
 méchant, *naughty.*
 méconnaître, *not to recognize.*
 médecin, *doctor.*
 médecine, *medicine.*
 médire, *to slander.*
 meilleur, *better.*
 mêla (s'en), *mixed up in it.*
 mélancolie, *melancholy.*
 même, *same, even.*
 mener, *to lead, to take.*
 menèrent, *from mener.*
 mentir, *to lie.*
 méprendre (se), *to be mistaken.*
 mépris, *contempt.*
 merci, *thank you.*
 merveille, *marvel.*
 merveilleux, *wonderful.*
 mes, *my.*
 mesdames, *ladies.*
 mesdemoiselles, *young ladies.*
 messeoir, *to be unbecoming.*
 mettant, *from mettre.*
 mettez (mettre), *to put, to put on.*
 mettre, *to put.*
 meurent (mourir, *to die).*
 Mexique (le), *Mexico.*
 miaou, *the mewling of a cat.*
 mieux, *better.*
 milieu, *midst.*
 mille, *thousand.*
 million, *million.*
 mince, *thin.*

mine, *a sum of money in Greece.*
 minuit, *midnight.*
 minute, *minute.*
 mirer (se), *to be reflected.*
 mis, *from mettre.*
 misère, *poverty.*
 mode, *fashion.*
 moi, *me, I.*
 moi-même, *myself.*
 moins, *less.*
 mois, *months.*
 moment, *moment.*
 mon, *my.*
 monde, *world.*
 monde (tout le), *everybody.*
 monsieur, *Sir, Mr.*
 montagne, *mountain.*
 monter, *to go up, to rise.*
 montrer, *to show.*
 moquer de (se), *to laugh at, to make game of.*
 morceau, *piece.*
 morte, *dead.*
 mot, *word, saying.*
 mourir, *to die.*
 mourut (mourir, *to die).*
 mouvement, *motion.*
 moyen, *means.*
 muguet, *lily of the valley.*
 multitude, *multitude.*
 mur, *wall.*
 muraille, *wall.*
 murmurer, *to murmur.*
 musée, *museum.*
 myope, *short-sighted.*
 mystère, *mystery.*

N

n' for ne.
 naître, *to be born.*
 nappe, *cloth.*
 naturel, *natural.*
 ne (negative particle).
 négligence, *negligence.*
 neige, *snow.*
 ne...plus, *not again, no longer, no more.*

ne...que, *only.*
 nés (naître), *to be born.*
 neuf, *nine.*
 ni...ni, *neither, nor.*
 nièce, *niece.*
 noble, *noble.*
 noir, *black.*
 nom, *name.*
 nommer (se), *to be called.*
 non, *no.*
 notre, *our.*
 nouer, *to tie.*
 nous, *we.*
 nouveau (de), *again.*
 nouvel (nouveau), *new.*
 nouvelle, *news, tidings.*
 noyer, *walnut tree.*
 nuage, *cloud.*
 nuit, *night.*
 nuit (faire), *to be dark.*
 nu-pieds, *barefooted.*

O

obéir (à), *to obey.*
 objet, *object, thing.*
 obliger, *to oblige.*
 observaient (s'), *were observed, kept (of customs).*
 obtenir, *to obtain.*
 occupé, *busy.*
 odeur, *fragrance.*
 œuf, *egg.*
 œuvre, *work.*
 offenser (s'), *to take offence.*
 offre, *from offrir.*
 offrir, *to offer.*
 oh! oh!
 oh bien! *indeed!*
 omettre, *to omit.*
 on, *one, they, people.*
 oncle, *uncle.*
 onze, *eleven.*
 opinion, *opinion.*
 or, *gold.*
 oreille, *ear.*
 orfèvre, *goldsmith.*
 ôtant, *taking off.*
 ou, *or.*
 où, *where, in which.*
 oublier, *to forget.*

N

oui, *yes*.
ouvert (ouvrir), *to open*.
ouvrage, *work*.
ouvraient, *from ouvrir*,
to open.
ouvre, *from ouvrir*.
ouvrir, *to open*.

P

page, *page*.
paille, *straw*.
pain, *bread*.
paix! *silence!*
pâle, *pale*.
pâlir, *to grow pale*.
panier, *basket*.
papa, *papa*.
papier, *paper*.
par, *by, through*.
paraît (paraître), *to appear*.
parapet, *parapet (of a bridge)*.
parapluie, *umbrella*.
parce que, *because*.
parcourir, *to travel over*.
par-dessus, *above, over*.
pardon, *excuse me*.
pardonner (à), *to pardon*.
parent, *parent, relation*.
parents, *parents, relations*.
paresse, *idleness*.
paresseux, *idle*.
parfaitement, *perfectly*.
parier, *to bet*.
parler, *to speak*.
parole, *word*.
paroxysme, *highest point*.
part, *share*.
part, *starts, goes*.
part (prendre), *to sympathise*.
partageait, *shared*.
partager, *divide, share*.
partie, *part, party, game*.
partir, *to set out*.
parure, *ornament*.
parvenir, *to reach*.
pas (ne), *not*.

pas, *step*.
passage, *passage, way*.
passait (il), *there passed*.
passer, *to spend, to pass*.
passion, *passion, longing*.
patte, *paw*.
patrie, *fatherland*.
paupière, *eyelid*.
pauvre, *poor*.
pavé, *pavement*.
payer, *to pay*.
peau, *skin*.
pêcher, *to sin*.
pêcher, *to fish*.
peine, *sorrow*.
peler, *to peel*.
pencher, *to lean*.
pendant, *during*.
pendre, *to hang*.
pendu, *from pendre*.
pensée, *thought*.
penser, *to think*.
penser à, *to think of*.
penser de, *to have an opinion*.
perclus, *crippled*.
perdit, *lost*.
perdre, *to lose*.
perdu, *lost*.
père, *father*.
permettre, *to allow*.
personnages, *people*.
personne, *f. person*.
personne (ne), *nobody*.
personnel, *personal*.
personnes, *persons, people*.
perspective, *prospect*.
persuader, *persuade*.
petit, *small*.
petit (le), *the little fellow*.
petits-pois, *peas*.
peu, *little*.
peu à peu, *little by little*.
peur (avoir), *to be afraid*.
peur, *fear*.
peut, *can*.
peut-être, *perhaps*.
peuvent (pouvoir), *to be able*.

peux (pouvoir), *to be able to*.
phrase, *phrase*.
pièce, *piece*.
pied, *foot*.
pied (à), *on foot*.
pierre, *stone*.
pis, *worse*.
pistolet, *pistol*.
placer, *to place*.
plaindre, *to pity*.
plaindre (se), *to complain*.
plaisir, *pleasure*.
plein jour, *broad daylight*.
pleurer, *to shed tears, to weep*.
plonger, *to plunge, to sink*.
plu (pleuvoir), *to rain*.
pluie, *rain*.
plume, *pen*.
plus, *more, much, many*.
plus (le) *the most*.
plus (ne...), *no more*.
plût (pleuvoir), *to rain*.
plutôt, *rather*.
poche, *pocket*.
poète, *poet*.
point (ne...), *not*.
pointes, *points*.
points suspensifs, *dots*.
police, *police*.
pomme de terre, *potato*.
pont, *bridge*.
porte, *door*.
portefeuille, *pocket-book*.
porter, *to carry, to wear, to bear, to take*.
porter (se), *to be (referring to health)*.
position, *position*.
posséder, *to possess*.
poste, *f., post-office*.
potage, *soup*.
poterne, *postern*.
pouah! *pooh!*
pouce, *inch*.
poularde, *fat pullet*.
poulet, *chicken*.
"sur, *for, in order to*.
pour que, *so that*.
pourquoi, *why*.

pourrons (pouvoir, *to be able to*). [*go on.*]
 poursuivre, *to pursue, to*
 pourtant, *however.*
 pourvu que, *provided that, (I hope that).*
 pousser, *to push.*
 poussiéreuse, *dusty.*
 pouvaient, *could.*
 pouvais (pouvoir, *to be able to*).
 pouvait, *from pouvoir.*
 pouvoir, *to be able.*
 précieux, *precious.*
 précipiter (se), *to pounce upon.*
 précis, *exact.*
 précisément, *precisely.*
 prédire, *to foretell.*
 préfecture de police, *chief police office.*
 premier, *first.*
 prenant, *from prendre.*
 prendre, *to take, to catch.*
 prennent (prendre, *to take*).
 près, *nearly.*
 prescrire, *to prescribe.*
 présent, *present.*
 présomption, *presumption, conceit.*
 presque, *almost, nearly.*
 pressentir, *to have a presentiment.*
 présumer, *to presume.*
 prêt, *ready.*
 prêter, *to lend.*
 prêtre, *priest.*
 prévaloir, *to prevail.*
 prévaloir (se), *to take advantage of.*
 prévenir, *to come before, to warn.*
 prévoir, *to foresee.*
 prévu, *from prévoir.*
 prier, *beg, pray, request.*
 prince, *prince.*
 princier, *princely.*
 pris, *from prendre.*
 priser, *to take snuff.*
 prissiez (prendre, *to take*).
 prit, *from prendre.*
 prites, *from prendre.*

prix, *prize.*
 prochain, *next.*
 proches, *relations.*
 prodige, *prodigy, miracle.*
 produire, *to produce.*
 professeur, *professor.*
 profond, *deep.*
 progrès, *progress, improvement.*
 projet, *plan, project.*
 promener (se), *to walk, to go for a walk.*
 promettre, *to promise.*
 propos (à), *to the point.*
 propre, *own, clean.*
 proprement, *neatly.*
 proscrire, *to proscribe.*
 protection, *protection.*
 protéger, *to protect.*
 prouver, *to prove.*
 proverbe, *proverb.*
 proverbial, *proverbial.*
 Providence, *Providence.*
 prune, *plum.*
 prunelle, *pupil of the eye.*
 public, *public.*
 puis, *then.*
 puis (pouvoir, *to be able*).
 puissance, *power.*
 puisse (pouvoir, *to be able*).
 punir, *to punish.*
 pupitre, *desk.*

Q

qu' *for que.*
 quand, *when.*
 quant à, *as to.*
 quarante, *forty.*
 quart, *fourth.*
 quartier, *district.*
 quatre, *four.*
 que, *whom, which, what.*
 que, *that, than.*
 que (ne...), *only.*
 quel, *what.*
 quelque, *some.*
 quelque chose, *something.*
 quelque... que, *however.*
 quelques-uns, *some.*
 questions, *questions.*

queue, *tail.*
 qui, *who, which.*
 quinze, *fifteen.*
 quitter, *to leave, to part from.*
 quoi! *what!*
 quoi que, *whatever.*
 quoique, *although.*

R

rabattre, *to bring down.*
 raconter, *to relate.*
 Radonvilliers, *a proper name.*
 ramener, *to bring back.*
 rancune (garder), *to bear malice.*
 ranger, *to arrange.*
 rapide, *rapid.*
 rappeler (se), *to remember.*
 rapporter, *to bring in, to bring back.*
 rapporter, *to repeat.*
 rapprendre, *to learn again.*
 rassemblement, *crowd.*
 ravissement, *rapture.*
 rayonner, *to beam.*
 réaliser, *to realise.*
 réalité, *reality.*
 rebouillir, *to boil again.*
 recevoir, *to receive.*
 reclus, *recluse.*
 recommander, *to recommend.*
 recommencer, *to begin again.*
 reconduire, *to lead back.*
 reconnaissant, *grateful.*
 reconnaître, *to recognise.*
 reconquérir, *to conquer again.*
 recoudre, *to sew again.*
 recourir, *to have recourse to.*
 recouvert, *from recouvrir.*
 recouvrir, *to cover over (or again).*

<i>écrire, to write again.</i> <i>reçu (recevoir, to receive).</i> <i>recueillir, to collect.</i> <i>recuire, to cook again.</i> <i>reculer, to draw back.</i> <i>reçut, received.</i> <i>redevenir, to become again.</i> <i>redire, to say again.</i> <i>redresser, to raise again.</i> <i>réduire, to reduce.</i> <i>réélire, to re-elect.</i> <i>refaire, to do again, to fool.</i> <i>refermer, to close again.</i> <i>refus, refusal.</i> <i>regard, look.</i> <i>regarder, to look at.</i> <i>règle, rule.</i> <i>regret, regret.</i> <i>regretter, to regret.</i> <i>régulièrement, regularly.</i> <i>rejoindre, to join again.</i> <i>réjouir, to cheer.</i> <i>relire, to read again.</i> <i>remercier, to thank.</i> <i>remettre, to put back, to put off.</i> <i>remit, from remettre.</i> <i>remoudre, to grind again (corn, &c.).</i> <i>rémondre, to grind (sharpen) again.</i> <i>remplir, to fill.</i> <i>remporter, to carry off.</i> <i>renaitre, to be born again.</i> <i>rencontrer, to meet.</i> <i>rendez-vous, appointment.</i> <i>rendormir, to lull, (se —), to sleep again.</i> <i>rendre, to render.</i> <i>rendre (se), to go.</i> <i>renoncer (à), to relinquish.</i> <i>renseignements, information.</i> <i>rente, income.</i> <i>rentraire, to fine-draw, to darn.</i>	<i>rentrer, to come in again, to come back.</i> <i>repaitre, to feed, to feast.</i> <i>repaitre (se), to feed, to feast.</i> <i>répandant, shedding.</i> <i>reparaître, to re-appear.</i> <i>reparaître, to show oneself again.</i> <i>réparer, to repair.</i> <i>reparler, to speak again.</i> <i>repartir, to set out again.</i> <i>repartir, to reply.</i> <i>reparu, from reparaître.</i> <i>repas, meal.</i> <i>repentir (se), to repent.</i> <i>répéter, to repeat.</i> <i>répliquer, to reply.</i> <i>répondit, answered.</i> <i>répondre, to reply.</i> <i>réponse, answer.</i> <i>repos, rest.</i> <i>reprenant, from reprendre.</i> <i>reprandre, to take back (or again).</i> <i>reprandre, to reply, to resume.</i> <i>représentation, performance.</i> <i>représenter, to represent, also to remark.</i> <i>reprit, replied.</i> <i>reproduire, reproduce.</i> <i>requérir, to claim.</i> <i>réséda, mignonette.</i> <i>réserver, to keep.</i> <i>résistance, resistance.</i> <i>résister à, to resist.</i> <i>ressentir, to feel.</i> <i>ressortir, to go out again, also to be set off.</i> <i>ressouvenir, to remember again.</i> <i>rester, to remain.</i> <i>restreindre, to restrict.</i> <i>retard (en), late, behind time.</i> <i>retenir, to keep back.</i> <i>retomber, to fall back.</i> <i>retourner (se), to turn round.</i>	<i>retrouver, to find again.</i> <i>réussir, to succeed.</i> <i>revaloir, to return (a good office).</i> <i>rêve, dream.</i> <i>revenait, from revenir.</i> <i>revenir, to come back.</i> <i>revenu, from revenir.</i> <i>rêver, to dream.</i> <i>reverrons, from revoir, to see again.</i> <i>revêtir, to clothe.</i> <i>réveur, thoughtful.</i> <i>reviendrons (revenir, to come back).</i> <i>revint, from revenir.</i> <i>revit, saw again.</i> <i>revivre, to revive.</i> <i>revoir, to see again.</i> <i>ri (rire, to laugh).</i> <i>riant, laughing.</i> <i>riche, rich.</i> <i>rideaux, curtains.</i> <i>rien (ne...), nothing.</i> <i>rire, to laugh.</i> <i>risque, risk.</i> <i>rivaliser, to vie with.</i> <i>roi, king.</i> <i>roman, novel.</i> <i>romp, from rompre.</i> <i>rompre, to break.</i> <i>roue, wheel.</i> <i>rouge, red.</i> <i>rouge, red (hot).</i> <i>route, road, way.</i> <i>rouvrir, to re-open.</i> <i>rubis, rubies.</i> <i>rue, street.</i> <i>rugueuse, wrinkled.</i> <i>Russie, Russia.</i>
---	--	--

S

s' for se and si.
sa, his, her, its.
sable, sand.
sabre, sword.
sachant (savoir, to know).
sache (savoir, to know).
sachez, you must know.
sage, adj., well behaved.

sage, s., a wise man.	sentiment, feeling, sense.	sonner, to strike, to ring.
sain, healthy.	sentir, to feel.	sonnette, bell.
sais (savoir, to know).	séparation, separation, parting.	sont, from être.
saisir, to seize.	séparer, to separate.	sorcier, sorcerer.
saisissant, from saisir.	septembre, September.	sorte, kind, sort.
sait, from savoir.	sera, will be.	sortir, to go out.
sale, nasty.	seras, from être.	sortit, from sortir.
salon, drawing-room.	sergent, constable.	sou, sou, a halfpenny.
sang, blood.	seront, from être.	soucoupe, saucer.
sans, without.	serrer, to press, to pinch.	soudain, suddenly, directly.
sans cesse, without ceasing.	sert (se), uses.	souffle, breath.
sans que, without that.	servait, from servir.	souffrir, to suffer.
satisfaire, satisfy.	service, service.	souhaiter, to wish.
satisfait, satisfied.	serviette, napkin.	soumettre, to submit.
sauf, except.	servir, to serve up, to wait upon.	soupçonner, to suspect.
saurais (savoir, to know).	servir de, to be used as, to serve as.	soupirer, to sigh.
saurez (savoir, to know).	servir (se) de, to make use of.	souriant, smiling.
sauver, to save.	ses, his, her.	sourire, to smile.
savaient (savoir, to know).	seul, alone, only one.	sournois, sneak.
savant, learned man, scholar.	Sganarelle, a proper name.	sous, under.
savent (savoir, to know).	si, so.	souscrire, to subscribe.
savez, from savoir.	si, yes (after a negative).	soustraire, to subtract.
savons (savoir, to know).	si, if.	soutenir, to sustain.
scélérat, rogue.	siège, seat.	souvenir (se), to remember.
Scribe, a proper name.	si fait, yes, indeed.	souvenir (se) de, to remember.
se, oneself, himself, de.	signer, to sign.	souvent, often.
sec, dry.	signer (se), to make the sign of the cross.	soyez, from être.
seconde, second (time).	signifier, to signify.	spectacle, play.
secouer, to shake.	silence, silence.	sphère, sphere, globe.
secourir, to succour.	silencieux, silent.	stupéfait, stupefied.
secret, secret.	six, six.	substantif, noun, substantive.
secret (en), secretly.	sœur, sister.	subvenir, to supply.
secrètes, secret.	soif (avoir), to be thirsty.	succéder à, to succeed.
section, paragraph, part.	soigneusement, carefully.	succès, success.
séduire, seduce.	soir, evening.	suffire, to suffice.
semaine, week.	soirée, evening.	Suisse, Switzerland.
sembler (il), it seems.	soit, from être.	suir, from suivre.
sembler, to seem.	soit! be it so, very good.	suite (tout de), directly.
sens, sense, common sense.	soixante-dix, seventy.	suir, from suivre.
sens, sense, common sense.	soldat, soldier.	suivre, to follow.
senti, feels.	somme, sum.	sujet, subject.
sentent (sentir, to smell, to feel, to taste).	son, his, her, its.	superbe, splendid.
	songer à, to think of.	supplication, entreaty.
		supposé que, supposing that.
		sur, on, over
		sûr, sure.
		sûrement, assuredly.

surfaire, *to overrate, to overcharge.*
 surplus, *surplus, difference.*
 surprendre, *to surprise.*
 surpris, *surprised, overtaken.*
 surtout, *above all, especially.*
 survenir, *to come unexpectedly, to come up.*
 survint, *from survenir.*
 survivre, *to survive.*

T

t', *for te.*
 ta, *thy.*
 table, *table.*
 taire, *to say nothing of.*
 taire (se), *to hold one's tongue.*
 tait (il se), *he is silent.*
 talent, *talent.*
 tandis que, *whilst.*
 tant que, *as long as.*
 tantôt ... tantôt, *at one time, at another time.*
 taquiner, *to tease.*
 tard, *late.*
 tasse, *cup.*
 te, *thee, to thee.*
 teindre, *to dye.*
 tel, *such.*
 télégramme, *telegram.*
 temps, *time.*
 tenait (tenir), *to hold.*
 tendait, *stretched out.*
 tendon, *sinew.*
 tendre, *to stretch out.*
 tenez ! *look ! lo !*
 tenir, *to hold.*
 tentation, *temptation.*
 tenter, *to try.*
 terre, *earth.*
 terre (pomme de), *potato.*
 terrible, *terrible.*
 tête, *head.*
 thé, *tea.*
 théâtre, *theatre.*
 thème, *exercise.*
 tibia, *shin-bone.*

tiennes (tenir, *to hold, to keep.*)
 tiens, *hold, take (it), look, lo.*
 tiers, *third.*
 tins, *from tenir.*
 tirer, *to draw, to pull.*
 titre, *title.*
 tombait juste, *hit the mark.*
 tomber, *to fall.*
 tort (avoir), *to be in the wrong.*
 tôt, *early.*
 toucher, *to touch.*
 toujours, *always, continually.*
 tour, *turn.*
 tourner, *to turn.*
 tournoyer, *to turn round and round.*
 tous, *all.*
 tous les deux, *both.*
 tout, *all, quite.*
 tout à coup, *suddenly.*
 tout (ne... plus du), *not any more, at all.*
 tout de suite, *immediately.*
 tout le monde, *everybody.*
 traduction, *translation.*
 traduire, *to translate.*
 train, *train.*
 traité, *treaty.*
 traître, *traitor.*
 tranquille, *calm.*
 transcrire, *to copy.*
 transmettre, *to transmit.*
 transparente, *transparent.*
 travail, *work.*
 travailler, *to work.*
 treize, *thirteen.*
 trembler, *to tremble.*
 trente, *thirty.*
 très, *very.*
 tressaillir, *to start.*
 tristesse, *sadness.*
 trois, *three.*
 tromper, *to deceive.*
 trompeur, *deceitful.*
 tronçons, *pieces.*
 trop, *too much.*

trottoir, *footway, pavement.*
 trouver, *to find.*
 truelle, *trowel.*
 tu, *thou.*
 Tuileries, *a garden in Paris.*

U

un, *a, one.*
 une, *a, one.*
 unique, *unique.*
 usage, *use, custom.*
 utile, *useful.*

V

va, *is going (from aller).*
 vain (en), *in vain.*
 vaincre, *to vanquish.*
 vaincus, *vanquished.*
 vais, *from aller.*
 vas (aller), *to go.*
 veiller, *to watch.*
 veiller à, *to watch over.*
 vendaient, *from vendre.*
 vendre, *to sell.*
 vends, *from vendre.*
 venez (venir, *to come).*
 venir, *to come.*
 Vénitiens, *Venetians.*
 vent, *wind.*
 venue, *from venir.*
 verbe, *verb.*
 véritable, *real, genuine.*
 vérité, *truth.*
 verrons (voir, *to see).*
 vers, *towards.*
 Versailles, *a city.*
 verser, *to pour.*
 version, *translation.*
 vétile, *trifle.*
 veuillez, *be so kind as.*
 veulent (vouloir, *wish).*
 veut, *wishes.*
 veux (tu), *wilt.*
 vie, *life.*
 vieillir, *to grow old.*
 viendrais (venir, *to come).*

viennent (venir, *to come*).
viens, *from venir*.
vient, *from venir*.
vieux, *old*.
vif, *lively, quick*.
vigne, *vine*.
village, *village*.
vimes (voir, *to see*).
vin, *wine*.
vingt, *twenty*.
vingt-cinq, *twenty-five*.
vint, *came*.
violet, *violet*.
vis (voir, *to see*).
vit, *from voir*.
vite, *quick, quickly*.
vive! *long live*.
vivement, *eagerly*.

vivent! *long live!*
voient (voir, *to see*).
voici, *here is*.
voilà, *there is*.
voilà que, *behold*.
voiler, *to veil*.
voir, *to see*.
voisin, *neighbour*.
voit, *sees*.
voiture, *carriage*.
voix, *voice*.
volaille, *poultry, fowl*.
voler, *to steal*.
vont, *from aller*.
vos, *your*.
votre, *your*.
voulais, *from vouloir*.
voulez, *will*.
vouloir, *to wish, to will*.

voulu, *from vouloir*.
vous, *you*.
voyage, *journey*.
voyant, *from voir*.
voyez, *from voir*.
voyons, *from voir*.
vraiment! *indeed!*
vraiment, *surely*.
vu, *from voir*.

Y

y, *there, in it*.
y, *there, to it*.
y avoir, *there to be*.
y a (il), *there is, there are*.
yeux, *eyes*.

ENGLISH-FRENCH VOCABULARY.

A

a, *an, une*.
able (to be), *pouvoir*.
abound, v., *abonder*.
about, *quelque, environ*.
academy, *l'académie, f.*
accent, *l'accent, m.*
accident, *accident, m.*
account of (on), *à cause de*.
ache, v., *avoir mal à*.
acquire, v., *acquérir*.
add, v., *ajouter*.
afraid (to be), *avoir peur, craindre*.
after, *après*.
afterwards, *ensuite*.
against, *contre*.
age (old), *la vieillesse*.
ago, *il y a*.
agree, v., *convenir de*.
all, tout, tous, &c.

allude, v., *faire allusion à*.
alone, *seul*.
alphabet, *alphabet, m.*
alphabetical, *alphabétique*.
also, *aussi*.
although, *quoique*.
always, *toujours*.
amuse, v., *amuser*.
amusing, *amusant*.
and, *et*.
angry, *fâché, en colère*.
another, *autre (un or l')*.
answer, v., *répondre*.
appeal to, v., *en appeler à*.
arrive, v., *arriver*.
as, *que, comme*.
as...as, *aussi...que*.
aside, *de côté*.
ask, v., *prier, demander, inciter à*.

as soon as, *dès que*.
astonish, v., *étonner*.
astonished, *étonné*.
attack, v., *attaquer*.
attention, *attention, f.*
attentive, *attentif*.
audacity, *la hardiesse*.
aunt, *taute*.
author, *l'auteur*.
auxiliary, *auxiliaire*.
avoid, v., *éviter*.

B

back, *le dos*.
bad, *mauvais*.
bare, *nu*.
bare-footed, *nu-pieds*.
baron, *le baron*.
be (to), *être*.
beard, *le harbe*.
because, *parce que*.

before, *devant* (place),
avant (time).
 begin, *v.*, *commencer*.
 behave, *v.*, *se comporter*.
 believe, *v.*, *croire*.
 besides, *autre, en outre*.
 besiege *v.*, *assiéger*.
 betray, *v.*, *trahir*.
 better (it is), *il vaut*
mieux.
 between, *entre*.
 big, *gros*.
 blow, *le coup*.
 boat, *le bateau*.
 book, *le livre*.
 born (to be born),
naître.
 born, *né*.
 both, *tous les deux, l'un*
et l'autre.
 bottle, *la bouteille*.
 box, *la boîte*.
 boy, *garçon*.
 brave, *brave*.
 bravely, *courageuse-*
ment.
 Brazil, *le Brésil*.
 break, *v.*, *casser*.
 breakfast, *déjeuner*.
 bring, *v.*, *apporter*.
 bring back, *v.*, *ramener*.
 brother, *frère*.
 brush (for painting), *le*
pinceau.
 bull, *le taureau*.
 busy, *occupé*.
 but, *mais*.
 butter, *le beurre*.
 buy, *v.*, *acheter*.
 by, *par*.

C

cabbage, *le chou*.
 call, *v.*, *appeler*.
 can (to be able to),
pouvoir.
 care, *le soin*.
 carriage, *la voiture*.
 cat, *le chat*.
 cauliflower, *le chou-*
fleur.
 cautiously, *avec pré-*
caution.

certain, *certain*.
 certainly, *certainement*.
 change, *le changement*.
 change, *v.*, *changer*.
 chapter, *le chapitre*.
 chess, *les échecs, m.*
 child, *l'enfant, m. & f.*
 China, *la Chine*.
 choice (wines), *vins de*
choix.
 choose, *choisir*.
 church, *église, f.*
 church (in), *à l'église*.
 city, *la cité, la ville*.
 class, *la classe*.
 clever, *habile*.
 cloth, *le drap*.
 coat, *l'habit, m.*
 cold (to be), *avoir*
froid.
 collar-bone, *la clavic-*
ule.
 collection, *la collection*.
 come, *v. venir*.
 come! *allons!*
 come back, *v.*, *revenir*.
 come before, *v.*, *pré-*
céder.
 come home, *v.*, *rentrer*.
 come in, *v.*, *entrer dans*.
 comfortable, *comfort-*
able, commode.
 comma, *la virgule*.
 commit, *v. commettre*.
 compare, *v.*, *comparer*.
 complain, *v.*, *se plain-*
dre.
 compliment, *le compli-*
ment.
 concert, *le concert*.
 condemn, *v.*, *condamner*.
 congratulate, *v.*, *félici-*
ter.
 contain, *v.*, *contenir*.
 cook, *v.*, *faire cuire*.
 cost, *v. coûter*.
 country, *la patrie, le*
pays, la campagne.
 courtier, *courtisan*.
 cousin, *le cousin, la*
cousine.
 cow, *la vache*.
 create, *v.*, *créer*.
 crime, *le crime*.

cross, *v.*, *traverser*.
 cry, *le cri*.
 cupboard, *l'armoire, f.*
 cure, *v.*, *guérir*.
 customer (his), *Vache-*
teur.
 cut, *v.*, *couper*.

D

danger, *le danger*.
 daughter, *la fille*.
 day, *le jour, la journée*.
 dead, *mort, adj.*
 dead, *mort (pp.)*.
 deal (a great), *beau-*
coup.
 dear, *cher*.
 death, *la mort (pp.)*.
 definite, *défini*.
 department, *le départe-*
ment.
 desire, *v.*, *désirer*.
 despair, *v.*, *désespérer*.
 devote oneself, *v.*, *s'ap-*
pliquer.
 dictation, *la dictée*.
 dictionary, *le diction-*
naire.
 die, *v.*, *mourir*.
 dine, *v.*, *dîner*.
 dinner, *le dîner*.
 directly, *tout de suite*.
 disagreeable, *désagréa-*
ble.
 discipline, *la discipline*.
 distant, *lointain*.
 distress, *la misère*.
 do, *v.*, *faire*.
 door, *la porte*.
 draught, *le courant*
d'air.
 drawing-room, *le salon*.
 dream, *v.*, *rêver à*.
 dress oneself, *v.*, *s'ha-*
biller.
 drink, *v.*, *boire*.
 drive out, *v.*, *chasser*.
 during, *pendant, du-*
rant.
 Dutch, *Hollandais*.
 duty, *le devoir*.
 dwell, *v.*, *demeurer*.

E

each, *chaque, tout*.
 each one, *chacun*.
 early, *tôt, de bonne heure*.
 earn, *v., gagner*.
 easily, *facilement*.
 edition, *l'édition*.
 effort, *effort, m.*
 Egypt, *l'Égypte, f.*
 eleventh, *onzième*.
 elsewhere, *ailleurs*.
 employ, *v., employer*.
 end, *la fin, le bout*.
 enemy, *l'ennemi, m.*
 engraving, *la gravure*.
 enjoy oneself, *v., s'amuser*.
 enlarge, *v., augmenter*.
 enough, *assez*.
 enter, *entrer dans*.
 entrust, *v., confier*.
 equal, *v., équaler*.
 error, *l'erreur, f.*
 even, *même*.
 evening, *le soir, la soirée*.
 ever, *toujours, jamais*.
 everything, *tout*.
 everywhere, *partout*.
 example, *l'exemple, m.*
 exasperate, *v., exaspérer*.
 exclaim, *v., s'écrier*.
 exercise, *l'exercice, m. le thème*.
 expect, *v. attendre*.
 expense, *dépens, m. pluriel*.

F

faint, *v., s'évanouir*.
 fall, *v., tomber*.
 famished, *affamé*.
 far from, *loin de*.
 fashion, *la mode*.
 fast, *vite*.
 father, *père, m.*
 fault, *la faute*.
 favourable, *favorable*.
 fear, *v., craindre*.
 feed, *v. nourrir*.
 fellow, *garçon, m.*

fetch, *v., chercher, prendre*.
 fifty, *cinquante*.
 fight, *v., se battre*.
 fill, *v., remplir*.
 find, *v., trouver*.
 fine, *beau*.
 fine (to be), *faire beau*.
 finish, *v., finir*.
 first, *premier*.
 fish, *le poisson*.
 fisherman, *le pêcheur*.
 flower, *la fleur*.
 follow, *v., suivre*.
 fond (to be), *aimer*.
 fool (jester), *fou*.
 foot, *pied*.
 for, *pour*.
 for, *conj., car*.
 for fear that, *de crainte que*.
 forget, *v., oublier*.
 forgive, *v., pardonner*.
 formerly, *autrefois*.
 forsake, *v., abandonner*.
 fortnight, *quinze jours*.
 forty-two, *quarante-deux*.
 four, *quatre*.
 fourth, *quatrième, quatre*.
 fowl, *la volaille*.
 franc, *le franc*.
 France, *la France*.
 Francis, *François*.
 French, *français, adj.*
 friend, *l'ami, l'amie*.
 from, *de*.
 fruit, *le fruit*.
 full, *plein*.
 future, *futur*.

G

game, *le jeu, la partie*.
 garden, *le jardin*.
 gate, *la grille*.
 gather, *v., cueillir*.
 gender, *le genre*.
 Geneva, *Genève*.
 gentleman, *homme comme il faut*.
 gentlemen, *messieurs*.
 gentleness, *la douceur*

give, *donner*.
 glad, *aise*.
 glass, *le verre*.
 glide, *v., glisser*.
 go, *v., aller*.
 go away, *v., s'en aller, partir*.
 go back, *v., retourner*.
 go for a walk, *v., se promener*.
 go out, *v., sortir*.
 good, *bon*.
 grammar, *la grammaire*.
 grandmother, *grand-mère*.
 grandson, *petit-fils*.
 grant, *v., accorder*.
 grave, *grave, adj.*
 great, *grand*.
 great deal (a), *beau-coup*.
 great many (a), *beau-coup*.
 grieved, *désolé, m.*
 grocer, *l'épicier*.
 ground, *le terrain*.
 grow, *v., croître*.
 grow (of plants), *v., pousser*.
 grow impatient, *v., s'impatienter*.
 growl, *v., grogner*.
 gunpowder, *la poudre à canon*.

H

hair, *les cheveux*.
 half, *demi*.
 hand, *la main*.
 happen, *v., se passer, arriver*.
 happy, *heureux*.
 hardly, *à peine*.
 hat, *le chapeau*.
 hate, *v., haïr*.
 have, *v., avoir*.
 heap, *le tas*.
 hear, *entendre*.
 hear of, *apprendre*.
 heat, *la chaleur*.
 help, *v., aider*.

Henry, *Henri*.
 here, *ici*.
 him, *le, lui, &c.*
 himself, *se, lui-même*.
 his, *son, &c.*
 hold, *v., tenir*.
 holder, *le porte-plume*.
 home (at), *à la maison*.
 honest, *honnête, brave*.
 horse, *le cheval*.
 horseback (on), *à cheval*.
 hour, *l'heure, f.*
 house, *la maison*.
 however, *cependant*.
 however, *quelque... que*.
 hundred, *cent*.
 hurt, *v., blesser, faire mal à*.
 hurt oneself, *v., se blesser*.

I

I, *je, moi*.
 I say! *dis donc!*
 if, *si*.
 ignorance, *l'ignorance, f.*
 ill, *malade*.
 imagination, *l'imagination, f.*
 immediately, *aussitôt*.
 imperative, *l'impératif, m.*
 imperfect, *imparfait*.
 imposing, *imposant*.
 in, *en, dans*.
 in case that, *en cas que*.
 indicative, *l'indicatif, m.*
 informed, *instruit*.
 ink, *l'encre, f.*
 inquire, *demander*.
 inquire after, *s'informer de*.
 inquisitive, *curieux (after the noun)*.
 intend for, *v., destiner à*.
 interesting, *intéressant*.
 introduce, *v., présenter à*.
 invention, *l'invention, f.*
 invite, *v., inviter*.

ironmonger, *le quincailler*.
 it, *il, elle, etc.*

J

jester, *bouffon*.
 John, *Jean*.
 joiner, *le menuisier*.
 join us, *soyez des nôtres*.

K

keep, *v., garder*.
 keep for, *v., garder*.
 keep from, *v., garantir*.
 key, *la clé*.
 kill, *v., tuer*.
 kind, *le genre*.
 kind (be kind enough to), *ayez la bonté de*.
 kindness, *la bonté*.
 king, *roi*.
 knife, *le couteau*.
 know, *v., connaître, savoir*.

L

lady, *la dame*.
 land, *le pays*.
 language, *la langue*.
 last, *dernier*.
 laugh, *v., rire*.
 lawyer, *l'avocat*.
 lead, *v., mener*.
 lead away, *v., emmener*.
 learn, *v., apprendre*.
 learned, *savant*.
 leave, *v., quitter*.
 lecture, *la conférence*.
 leg, *la jambe*.
 lend, *v., prêter*.
 less, *moins*.
 lesson, *la leçon*.
 let, *v., laisser*.
 letter, *la lettre*.
 library, *la bibliothèque*.
 lightning, *l'éclair, m.*
 like, *comme*.
 like, *v., aimer*.
 listen, *v., écouter*.
 live, *v., vivre, demeurer*.
 long, *long*.

long, *adv., longtemps*.
 long live! *vive! vivent!*
 look! *tiens! tenez!*
 look at, *v., regarder*.
 look for, *v., chercher*.
 lose, *v., perdre*.
 love, *v., aimer*.
 lunch, *le déjeuner*.

M

machine, *la machine*.
 magnificent, *magnifique*.
 majesty, *majesté*.
 make, *v., faire*.
 make haste, *v., se dépêcher*.
 Malta, *Malte*.
 man, *homme*.
 manufacture, *v., fabriquer*.
 many, *beaucoup, bien*.
 market, *le marché*.
 marsh, *le marais*.
 master, *le maître*.
 masterpiece, *le chef-d'œuvre*.
 matter (what is the)? *qu'y a-t-il?*
 me, *moi*.
 meaning, *la signification*.
 meat, *la viande*.
 meet with, *v., rencontrer*.
 merciful, *clément*.
 microphone, *le microphone*.
 mignonette, *le réséda*.
 mile, *le mille*.
 milk, *le lait*.
 milk, *v., traire*.
 mind, *esprit*.
 mind! *gure!*
 minute, *la minute*.
 mire, *la fondrière*.
 misfortune, *le malheur*.
 mistake, *la faute*.
 mistrust, *v., se défier de*.
 modest, *modeste*.
 money, *l'argent, m.*
 month, *le mois*.

more, *plus, davantage.*
 morning, *le matin, la matinée.*
 mother, *mère.*
 move, *v., se remuer, reculer.*
 much, *beaucoup.*
 much, *très.*
 museum, *le musée.*
 music, *la musique.*
 must (to be necessary), *v., falloir.*
 must (to be obliged to), *devoir.*
 mutter, *marmotter.*

N

name, *le nom.*
 neighbourhood, *le voisinage.*
 neighbouring, *voisin.*
 neck, *le cou.*
 negligence, *la négligence.*
 neither... nor, *ni... ni.*
 never, *ne... jamais.*
 new, *nouveau, neuf.*
 news, *la nouvelle.*
 newspaper, *le journal.*
 no, *non.*
 nobleman, *gentilhomme.*
 nobody, *personne ne.*
 noise, *le bruit.*
 not, *ne... pas.*
 nothing, *ne... rien.*
 now, *à présent, maintenant.*

O

o, *ô.*
 occasion, *l'occasion, f.*
 o'clock, *heure, heures.*
 of, *de.*
 often, *souvent.*
 oh! *ah!*
 old, *âgé, vieux, ancien.*
 old age, *la vieillesse.*
 on, *sur.*
 one, *un, une.*
 orchard, *le verger.*
 other, *autre.*

ought (to be obliged to), *v., devoir.*
 overcoat, *le pardessus.*
 overwhelm, *v., accabler de.*
 owe a grudge, *v., en vouloir à.*

P

page, *la page.*
 painting, *la peinture.*
 pair, *la paire.*
 paper, *le papier.*
 parson, *curé.*
 part, *la partie.*
 participle, *le participe.*
 pass, *v., passer.*
 passion, *la passion.*
 past, *passé.*
 path, *le sentier.*
 patience, *la patience.*
 pay (a visit), *rendre visite.*
 peach, *la pêche.*
 peasant, *le paysan.*
 peel, *v., peler.*
 pen, *la plume.*
 pencil, *le crayon.*
 people, *gens.*
 perfect, *parfait, passé.*
 perhaps, *peut-être.*
 person, *la personne.*
 Peter, *Pierre.*
 phonograph, *le phonographe.*
 photograph, *la photographie.*
 picture, *le tableau.*
 piece, *le morceau.*
 place, *la place.*
 place, *v., placer.*
 play, *v., jouer.*
 pleasant, *agréable.*
 please, *v., plaire à.*
 pleased with, *content de.*
 pleasure, *le plaisir.*
 pluck, *v., cueillir.*
 plural, *le pluriel.*
 poem, *le poème.*
 poet, *poète.*
 political, *politique.*
 poor, *pauvre.*

possess, *v., posséder.*
 post, *la poste.*
 postscript, *le post scriptum.*
 pound, *la livre.*
 prefer, *v., préférer.*
 prepare, *se préparer.*
 presence, *la présence.*
 present, *le présent.*
 present, *présent, adj.*
 pretty, *joli.*
 prevent, *v., empêcher.*
 price, *le prix.*
 properly, *proprement.*
 protect, *v., protéger.*
 prove, *v., prouver.*
 provide, *v., pourvoir.*
 provided that, *pourvu que.*
 Punch, *Polichinelle.*
 pull out, *v., tirer.*
 punish, *v., punir.*
 pupil, *l'élève, m. & f.*
 purpose (on), *exprès.*
 put away, *v., ranger.*
 put back, *v., remplacer.*
 put in order, *v., arranger.*
 put on, *v., mettre.*
 put up with, *v., souffrir.*

Q

queen, *la reine.*
 quickly, *vite.*
 quietly, *tranquillement.*
 quince, *le coing.*
 quite, *tout, tout à fait.*
 quotation, *la citation.*
 quote, *v., citer.*

R

rag, *le chiffon.*
 rain, *v., pleuvoir.*
 rain, *la pluie.*
 read, *v., lire.*
 reason, *la raison.*
 receive, *v., recevoir.*
 recent, *récent.*
 recourse (to have), *avoir recours à.*
 red, *rouge.*

remain, *v.*, *rester*.
 remark, *v.*, *remarquer*.
 remark, *v.*, *observer*.
 remember, *v.*, *se souvenir de*, *se rappeler*.
 repeat, *v.*, *répéter*.
 replace, *v.*, *remplacer*.
 repent, *v.*, *se repentir de*.
 reply, *v.*, *répliquer*.
 request, *la prière*.
 require, *avoir besoin de*.
 resist, *v.*, *résister à*.
 retort, *v.*, *répliquer*.
 ribbon, *ruban*.
 rise, *v.*, *se lever*.
 river, *la rivière*.
 road, *le chemin*.
 room, *la chambre*.
 rule, *la règle*.
 ruler, *la règle*.
 run, *v.*, *courir*.

S

sack, *v.*, *piller*.
 safe, *le garde-manger*.
 sailor, *le marin*, *le matelot*.
 same, *même*.
 sand, *le sable*.
 satisfied, *satisfait*.
 satisfy, *satisfaire*.
 saucepan, *la marmite*.
 save, *v.*, *sauver*.
 say, *v.*, *dire*.
 saying, *le dicton*.
 school, *le collège*, *l'école*, *f.*
 schoolfellow, *le camarade de collège*.
 science, *la science*.
 Scotland, *l'Écosse*, *f.*
 scratch out, *v.*, *effacer*.
 season, *la saison*.
 second, *second*, *deuxième*.
 secret, *le secret*.
 see, *v.*, *voir*.
 seize, *saisir*.
 sell, *v.*, *vendre*.
 send for, *envoyer chercher*.

senior, *ainé*.
 sense, *la raison*.
 September, *septembre*, *m.*
 servant, *le or la domestique*, *la bonne*.
 service, *le service*.
 set fire to, *mettre le feu à*.
 several, *plusieurs*.
 share, *v.*, *partager*.
 shelf, *le rayon*.
 shilling, *le shilling*.
 shop, *boutique*.
 shopman, *commis*.
 short, *court*.
 shout, *v.*, *crier*.
 show, *v.*, *montrer*, *faire voir*.
 shudder, *v.*, *frémir*.
 shut, *v.*, *fermer*.
 siege, *le siège*.
 silence! *paix! silence!*
 sin, *v.*, *pécher*.
 since, *depuis*.
 singular, *le singulier*.
 sink, *v.*, *s'enfoncer*.
 sire, *sire*.
 sister, *sœur*.
 situation, *la situation*.
 slate, *ardoise*.
 slave, *esclave*, *m.*
 slow, *lent*.
 snow, *la neige*.
 so, *ainsi*.
 soldier, *le soldat*.
 something, *quelque chose*.
 son, *fil*.
 sooner, *plus tôt*, *plutôt*.
 sooner or later, *tôt ou tard*.
 sorry, *fâché*.
 south, *le midi*.
 speak, *v.*, *parler*.
 spectacles, *lunettes*, *f. pl.*
 spell, *v.*, *épeler*.
 spend, *v.*, *passer (time)*, *dépenser (money)*.
 spoil, *v.*, *gâter*.
 sponge, *l'éponge*, *f.*
 spring, *le ressort*.
 stamp, *le timbre*.
 start, *v.*, *partir*.

state, *l'état*, *m.*
 stay, *v.*, *rester*, *demeurer*.
 still, *encore*.
 stone, *la pierre*.
 stop, *v.*, *arrêter*.
 straightforward, *franc*.
 strength, *la force*.
 strike, *la grève*.
 stroke, *v.*, *caresser*.
 strong, *fort*.
 subjunctive, *le subjonctif*.
 succeed, *v.*, *succéder à*.
 such as, *tel que*.
 suddenly, *soudain*, *à coup*.
 summer, *l'été*. [*soleil*].
 sunset, *le coucher de*.
 suppose, *supposer*.
 sure, *sûr*, *certain*.
 surprise, *v.*, *surprendre*.

T

table, *la table*.
 take, *v.*, *prendre*.
 take (gain), *v.*, *remporter*.
 take away, *v.*, *emporter*.
 take off, *ôter*.
 talent, *le talent*.
 talk about, *v.*, *parler de*.
 tall, *grand*.
 taste, *le goût*.
 telephone, *le téléphone*.
 tell, *v.*, *dire*, *raconter*.
 ten, *dir*.
 tenth, *dixième*.
 terrible, *terrible*.
 than, *que*.
 that, *ce*.
 that, *que*.
 theatre, *le théâtre*.
 their, *leur*, *leurs*.
 them, *eux*, *dc.*
 there, *adv.*, *là*, *y*.
 there is, *il y a*.
 therefore, *en conséquence*.
 they (indefinite), *on*.
 thing, *la chose*.
 think, *v.*, *penser*, *songer*.
 third, *troisième*.

thirty, *rente*.
 this, *ce, cet, etc.*
 thousand, *mille, mil*.
 threaten to, *menacer de*.
 three, *trois*.
 thrifty, *économe*.
 throw, *v., jeter*.
 thus, *ainsi*.
 ticket, *le billet*.
 tight, *serré*.
 time, *heure, f.*
 time, *le temps, la fois, l'époque, f.*
 tired, *fatigué*.
 to, *à*.
 to (in order to), *pour*.
 to-morrow, *demain*.
 too, *trop*.
 too, *aussi*.
 tooth, *la dent*.
 touch, *v., toucher à*.
 town, *la ville*.
 translation, *la traduction, la version*.
 tree, *l'arbre, m.*
 Triboulet, *Triboulet*.
 trick, *le tour*.
 trot, *v., trotter*.
 truth, *la vérité*.
 try, *v., tâcher*.
 try to, *essayer de*.
 two, *deux*.

U

umbrella, *le parapluie*.
 uncle, *oncle*.
 understand, *v., entendre, comprendre*.

uneasy, *inquiet*.
 unfortunate, *malheureux*.
 unless, *à moins que*.
 until, *jusqu'à, jusqu'à ce que, que*.
 up to, *jusqu'à*.
 upset, *v., renverser*.
 use, *v., se servir de*.
 useful, *utile*.

V

verb, *le verbe*.
 very, *très*.
 view, *la vue*.
 vigorous, *vigoureux*.
 vine, *la vigne*.
 violent, *violent*.
 visit, *la visite*.

W

waistcoat, *le gilet*.
 wait for, *v., attendre*.
 walk, *v., marcher, se promener*.
 wall, *le mur, la muraille*. [*de*.
 want, *v., avoir besoin*.
 war, *la guerre*.
 watch, *la montre*.
 we, *nous*.
 weak, *faible*.
 weather, *le temps*.
 Wednesday, *mercredi*.
 well, *bien, adv.*
 wet, *mouillé*.

whatever, *quel... que*.
 wheat, *le froment*.
 when, *quand, lorsque*.
 where, *où*.
 which, *que*.
 who, *qui*.
 whole, *tout*.
 whom, *qui, que*.
 wide, *large*.
 window, *la fenêtre*.
 wine, *le vin*.
 wish, *v., souhaiter, désirer, vouloir*.
 with, *avec*.
 without, *sans*.
 woman, *femme*.
 wonderful, *admirable*.
 wood, *le bois*.
 word, *le mot*.
 work, *v., travailler*.
 workman, *l'ouvrier*.
 world, *le monde*.
 worthy, *digne*.
 wound, *v., blesser*.
 write out, *v., écrire*.

Y

yard, *le mètre*.
 year, *l'an, m., l'année, f.*
 yes, *oui*.
 yesterday, *hier*.
 yet, *encore*.
 you, *vous*.
 young man, *le jeune homme*.
 young woman, *la jeune fille*.

EXAMINATION PAPERS.

GRAMMAR AND IDIOMS.

N.B.—*The Roman figures between parenthesis refer to the Lesson which contains the answers.*

FIRST PAPER.

1. What place does *y* occupy in the compound tenses of *y avoir*, used negatively?
2. *Il y a* is the translation of "there is," what would "there are" be in French?
3. Give the feminine plural of the *pp.* of *agréer* (VI.).
4. Write down the *f.*, the *SUBJ. pr.* and the *pp.* of *falloir* and *pleuvoir* (V.).
5. Do you know of any French verbs which have a pronoun in the imperative?
6. Translate "they would have rested," and give the *IMPT.* of *se repentir* (IV.).
7. Render into French "to keep time—take this book to your father—take this child to school—he is late—it is late" (III-VI.).
8. Explain the difference between *se lever tard* and *se lever en retard* (II.).

SECOND PAPER.

1. Give the IMPT. and SUBJ. *pr.* of *s'en aller* (x.) 2. When do verbs of the first conjugation take an *s* in the second person singular of the IMPT. (ix.)? 3. Correct, if necessary, the following: *je jète, je pelle, je mène* (viii.) 4. Explain the rule about the cedilla in verbs in *cer.* 5. Give the IMPT. of *bercer, lacer, forcer, tracer, menacer*, and the three persons plural of the INDICAT. *pr.* of *ranger, figer, gager, venger, juger* (vii.). 6. What is the French for: I cannot afford to—every other day—tell him so—all right (vii.-x.)?

THIRD PAPER.

1. Translate in three ways, "This room is twenty feet long" (xviii.). 2. Give a list of adjectives which usually come before the noun (xvi.). 3. Is the following correct, *donnez-moi DE petits pois* (xiv.)? 4. What is the gender of *rose, valeur, musée, raison* (xi.), and of *cerisier, chapeau, bain, câble* (xi.)? 5. Give the French equivalent for: Does he live here? He does—he could have come—I have just dined—to enter a room—don't take the trouble—don't trouble (xi.-xviii.).

FOURTH PAPER.

1. Make up sentences in which *en* takes the place of *d'elle*, and *y* that of *à elle* (xxiv.). 2. Show, by giving a French sentence, the

respective order of *y*, *le*, and *leur*, before a verb (xxii.). 3. When must you translate "each" by *chacun*, and when by *chaque* (xxi.)? 4. What is wrong in *j'ai mal à ma tête* (xix.)? 5. Translate: I have ordered a new coat—it is dirty weather—light me downstairs—I told you so, did I not? (xix.-xxiv.) 6. Explain the peculiarity in the gender of *amour*, *orgue*, *délice*, *gens* (pages 148-149).

FIFTH PAPER.

1. In what case is *qui* in *qui frappe*? and in *qui a-t-il frappé* (xxx.)? 2. Correct, if necessary, *c'est un homme aux vertus dont je rends justice—voici le livre que vous aviez besoin*, and give the reason for your corrections (xxix.). 3. When are *personne* and *chose* masculine (xxvii.)? 4. When must "what" be translated by *ce qui*, *ce que* (xxvi.)? 5. What are the French idioms corresponding to: Did you enjoy your walk?—to enjoy oneself—he is so particular—at any cost—each to his taste—we have had a good game (xxiv.-xxix.).

SIXTH PAPER.

1. Translate: "I want a book," "I doubt it," "do not touch that," "I remember it," "use my dictionary" (xxxvi.). 2. What prepositions do the following verbs require before a noun *espérer*, *remercier*, *parler*, *s'informer* (xxxv.)? 3. Is "with" always translated by

avec (xxxiv.)? 4. Both the following sentences are right: *c'est nous, ce sont eux*; explain the rule (xxxii.). 5. What is the English for: *librairie* (xxxvi.)? 6. How do you translate into French: to go for a ride—to marry (three ways)—to succeed (two ways)—I know this man—I know my lesson—I know that he is here (xxxiv-xxxv.)? 7. Give the origin of the rule about the past participle used with *avoir* (p. 149).

SEVENTH PAPER.

1. Correct the following sentences, and explain your corrections: *elles se sont pardonnées—elle s'est coupée la main—où sont les pommes? je les ai mangé* (xlii., xliii.). 2. *Donner* requires à; what has become of à in: *il lui donne un livre?* Give the rule, and also the exceptions to the rule (xxxviii.). 3. In how many ways can you translate into French: I remember it (xxxvii.)? 4. Render into French: I have remained—I have dwelt—we have agreed—it has suited us (xl.)? 5. Give the rules on the agreement of the adjectives with *gens* (xxxvii-xl.). 6. Explain the apostrophe in *grand'mère* (p. 149).

EIGHTH PAPER.

1. In which of these two sentences would you translate “evening” by *soirée*: “I have spent a pleasant evening;” “where are you going this evening?” 2. When must you translate “people” by *gens, peuple, monde* (xlix.)?

3. Give four cases in which no article is used in French, although there is one in English (XLVIII.). 4. What is the reason for the use of the subjunctive in the following: *Si tu viens ici et que tu veuilles me voir, écris-moi—pensez-vous qu'il vienne* (XLVI., XLVII.)? 5. When would you translate the English imperfect by a French imperfect, and when by a past definite (XLIV.-XLV.)? 6. What is the meaning of: *le tour—le pendule—le mousse—le poste—le voile—le mémoire* (XLI.-XLIII.)?

NINTH PAPER.

1. When must you use *si* instead of *oui* (LV.)? 2. Enumerate the cases in which the particle *ne* must be used in French although there is no negative in English (LIV.). 3. How do you know when to translate: "before" by *avant* or *devant*; "with" by *de* or *avec*; "in" by *de* (LII.)? 4. Give six qualifying adjectives which change their meaning with their places (L.). 5. What is the gender of *orgues, délice, amours* (XLIV.)? 6. What is the French for: sooner or later—I am very sorry for it—I am very sorry for you (LI., LV.)? 7. Whence come the terminations *ai* and *ais* in the future and in the conditional (p. 150)?

TENTH PAPER.

1. Give a list of conjunctions which require the subjunctive (LVI.). 2. Render the following into French, and give your reason

in each case for using *ce* or *il*; Whose book is this?—it is mine—it is three o'clock—he is a doctor—it is ridiculous to do that—it is easy to say (LIX.). 3. Show, by examples, that “some, not any, hence,” can be translated by *en* (LVIII.). 4. What does *que* stand for in: *s'il vient et qu'il vous voie ici—montez que je vous parle—quand il viendra et qu'il vous verra* (LVII.)? 5. Would you use *quand* or *lorsque* to translate “when” in: when will you go (LVII.)? 6. What is the etymology of the indefinite pronoun *on*, and that of *mais* in the locution “il n'en peut mais” (p. 150)?

ALPHABETICAL INDEX.

*N.B.—When nothing is said to the contrary, the references are to **Sections**.*

A, by le, la in French, 277.
a, dropped, 226.
à, use of, 298.
accent, circumflex, 142.
accent, grave, 141.
accent in certain tenses, 142.
accent on *aître* and *ôître*, 143.
adjectives, agreement of, 170, 172.
adjectives, with two meanings, 288.
adjectives, degrees in, 177-179.
adjectives, indefinite, 186-194.
adjectives, invariable, 173.
adjectives, place of, 174-176.
adjectives, possessive, 185.
adjectives, qualifying, 170-176, 288-294.
adjectives, with à, 292.
adjectives, with de, 291.
adverbs, 306-311.
aître, verbs in, 143.
aller (*s'en*), 160.
amour (*page 75*).
an, 287.
and, dropped, 316.
année, 286.
any, 168.

any by en, 318.
article, used or not, 168, 169.
article, in idioms, 280.
article, repeated, 275.
article, in English not in French, 226, 279.
article, in French not in English, 276.
auxiliaries, 145, 251, 255.
avant, 295.
avoir, 253-255.
avoir (*y*), 148-150.
away, after words, 235.

Before, 295.
both, 183.
breadth, 182.

Cannot by *savoir*, 228.
capitals, 136.
cardinal numbers, 181.
c'est, 322, 324, 326.
c'est or *ce sont*, 230.
chacun, 194.
chaque, 193.
chose, *quelque*, 212, 214, 300.
comparison, degrees of, 177, 179.
conjunctions, 312, 317.
créer, 151.

- Dans**, 302.
 de, quelque chose, 300.
 de, rien, 300.
 de, and the passive, 232.
 de, for dans, 297.
 délice (*page* 75).
 demi, 289.
 demonstrative pronouns, 207.
 depth, 182.
 devant, 295.
 dictation, 135, 137.
 dont, 217, 219.
- En**, in s'en aller, 161.
 en, preposition, 299, 303-305.
 en, pronoun, 195 197, 202, 318-319.
 être, 251, 252, 254.
 everybody, 285.
- F**, in Français, etc., 136.
 falloir, 147.
 falloir, three constructions, 231.
 feu, 290.
- Gender**, 162, 163.
 gender and number (*page* 75).
 gender, change of, (*page* 70, 73).
 gender of consonants, 138.
 gens, adjective after (*page* 64).
 gens, adjective before (*pages* 64, 66).
 gens, masculine (*page* 68).
 gens, indefinite, 281.
- H** aspirate or mute, 139.
 he is by c'est, 322.
 he is by il est, 323.
 height, 182.
 hence, 318 (*c*).
- Il** est, 279 (*a*), 323, 325, 326.
 imperative, s in the, 159.
 imperfect, 267-270.
 in by de, 297.
 indefinite adjectives, 186-194.
 indefinite pronouns, 208-214.
 irregular verbs (from *page* 100.)
 it is by c'est, 324, 326.
 it is by il est, 325, 326.
 interjections, 327.
- Jour**, 287.
 journée, 286.
- Later**, sooner or, 310.
 length, 182.
 le plus, invariable, 294.
 lequel? 224.
 less than, 177, 178.
 letters, 138, 139.
 lorsque, 317.
 l'un et l'autre, 210.
 l'un l'autre, 209.
- Matin**, 287.
 matinée, 286.
 même, 192.
 mille, 180.
 mine, a friend of, 206

mine, after is, 204.
monde by people, 284.
monde, tout le, 285.
more than, 177, 178.

e, 306.
ne...point, 309.
not any, 318 (*b*).
nouns, gender of, 162, 163.
nouns, plural in, 164-167.
nu, 289.
numerals, 180-184.
Off, after a verb, 235.
ôtre, verbs in, 143.
onze, 184.
orgue (*page* 75).
Par and the passive, 232.
pardonner, 240.
participle, past, 260-266.
participle, present, 256-259.
pas, dropped, 307, 308.
passive, 208, 273.
past definite, 271.
penser à or de, 238 (*N.B.*).
people, by gens, 283.
people, by monde, 284.
people, by peuple, 282.
perfect, 272.
personal pronouns, 195-202.
personne, 211.
personnes and gens, 281.
peux (*je*), 227.
pleuvoir, 146.
plus tôt and plutôt, 310.
point, dropped, 307, 308.
possessive adjectives, 185.

possessive pronouns, 203-206.
pour, 301.
prepositions, 295-305.
prepositions and adjectives, 291-294.
prepositions and the passive, 232.
prepositions and verbs, 233-249.
prier, 151.
pronouns, demonstrative, 207.
pronouns, indefinite, 208-214.
pronouns, interrogative, 220-225.
pronouns, personal, 195-202.
pronouns, possessive, 203-206.
pronouns, relative, 215-219.
pronouns and reflexive verbs, 144.
puis (*je*), 227.
Quand, 317.
que, 222.
que, conjunction, 313-315.
quel ? 225.
quel que, 190, 191.
quelque, 188.
quelque chose, 212, 300.
quelque chose de, 214.
quelque...que, 189, 191.
qui ? 221.

- Rappeler** (se), 241.
 rather, 310.
 reflexive verbs and à, 246.
 relative pronouns, 215, 219.
 rien, 213, 300.
 rien de, 214.
Savoir or **pouvoir**, 228.
 s'en aller, 160.
 si, tense after, 270.
 si, yes, 311.
 soir, 287.
 soirée, 286.
 some, 168.
 some, by en, 318.
 sooner, 310.
 sorry for, 293.
 souhaiter and an infinitive,
 235 (*N.B.*).
 souvenir (se), 241.
 stops, 137.
 stress in French, 135.
 subjunctive, 274.
 subjunctive, after quelque,
 191.
 subjunctive and conjunc-
 tions, 312.
 such a, 278.
 superlative, 294.
Tenses, 267, 272.
 the less.. the less, 179.
 the more...the more, 179.
 thence, 318 (*c*).
 to by pour, 233.
 tout, adverb, 186, 187.
Up, upon, and a verb, 235.
Verbs, agreement of, 229.
 verbs and an infinitive, 242.
 verbs, compound, 247.
 verbs of motion, 243.
 verbs in -âtre and -ôître,
 143.
 verbs in -ayer, -oyer, 158.
 verbs in -cer, 153.
 verbs in -éger, -éter, 157.
 verbs in -eler, -eter, 155, 156.
 verbs in -ger, 154.
 verbs, impersonal, 146.
 verbs, irregular, 152.
 verbs, list of (*from page*
 100).
 verbs, reflexive, 144, 145.
 verbs which cannot drop à,
 246-248.
 verbs which drop à, 244, 245.
 verbs with à and a noun,
 238, 239.
 verbs with de, 238, 239.
 verbs without a preposition,
 234.
 vouloir before a verb, 235
 (*N.B.*).
What ? 223.
 what a, 226.
 what, by ce qui, 207.
 width, 182.
 with, by à, 236.
 with, by avec, 237.
 with, by de, 236, 296.
Y, 195, 197, 202, 250, 321.
 y avoir, 148, 150.
 yes, by si, 311.

LIBRAIRIE HACHETTE & Cie

London : 18 King William Street, Charing Cross, W.C.

NEW CONVERSATIONAL FRENCH COURSE

BY

HENRI BUÉ, B. ès L.,

*Officier d'Académie, Principal French Master, Christ's Hospital, London,
formerly Examiner in the University of London.*

ILLUSTRATED FRENCH PRIMER,

OR

THE CHILD'S FIRST FRENCH LESSONS.

The easiest Introduction to the Study of French, containing the Alphabet, Easy Words and Phrases, Nursery Rhymes, and numerous Illustrations of Animals, Familiar Objects, etc.

New Edition. 160 pages, crown 8vo., cloth. 1s. 6d.

'In "Hachette's Illustrated French Primer" we have a capital little introduction to the mysteries of the French language intended for very young children, and really adapted to their comprehension. The pronunciation of the letters is first explained and exemplified, and then the young pupil is led on to mastery of words, simple sentences, and idiomatic phrases. There is no inculcation of formal rules: the eye, ear, and memory are alone appealed to, and by the proper use of this book teachers will be able to lay an excellent foundation for the future more systematic study of French.'—*Scotsman*.

'There is scarcely a page without a cleverly executed engraving, and a child could certainly learn French from no better devised or more interesting manual.'—*Literary Churchman*.

'The explanations are given in so attractive and novel a manner that one is interested *malgré soi*. This book is beautifully illustrated. Sometimes the artist shows dash and vigour, at other times humour predominates.'—*The Gentlewoman*.

EASY FRENCH LESSONS.

Including Easy Questions, Short Nursery Rhymes, Anecdotes and Fables.

New Edition. 64 pages, cloth. 8d.

The compiler of this little book has had in view to teach the young beginner as many French words as possible in the least tedious manner. He has found by experience that what children dislike most to learn are lists of words, however useful and well chosen, and that they very soon get weary of disconnected sentences, but commit to memory most readily a short nursery rhyme, anecdote, or fable. Hence the selection he has made.

(Continued overleaf.)

EASY FRENCH DIALOGUES.

A useful Collection of Sentences and Practical Conversations, Dialogues, and Drills, on every-day Subjects. Specially compiled for the Use of Beginners and young Pupils of both Sexes.

New Edition. 80 pages, crown 8vo., limp cloth. 6d.

'The subjects are such as occur in the every-day life of young people, and the conversations have an air of spontaneity and natural sequence. Each conversation or 'scene' is prefaced by a drill on the use of the verbs and the meaning and genders of the nouns employed in it.'—*School Board Chronicle*.

'Twenty scenes or series of conversations on common subjects form the first part of this little work. To these are added ten dialogues on topics of the classroom. The method adopted is practical, and should result in furnishing the pupil with a useful vocabulary.'—*University Correspondent*, October 10th, 1892.

'An excellent little book of easy French and English Dialogues on matters of daily occurrence.'—*Guardian*, September 14th, 1892.

'The dialogues which the French Master of Christ's Hospital has published have two distinct merits. In the first place, they are simple; in the second, they relate to matters of ordinary and daily occurrence. The preparatory "drills" constitute a further, and distinctly useful feature; and altogether the little volume is one from which considerable profit may be derived.'—*Glasgow Herald*, September 3rd, 1892.

'M. Henri Bué's French class-books are probably the best known of their kind. He has just supplemented them with another. "Easy French Dialogues" is a collection of thirty conversations with accompanying lessons. They are simple and progressive, and will be found useful to junior students of the French language.'—*Dundee Advertiser*, September 1st, 1892.

'... seem well adapted to facilitate the path of learners.'—*Manchester Guardian*, August 30th, 1892.

'The *Dialogues* are well adapted for beginners in the study of French, and are calculated to ground them in common idioms.'—*Literary World*, September 30th, 1892.

A PRIMER OF FRENCH COMPOSITION.

In Preparation.

THE FIRST FRENCH BOOK.

Accidence, Exercises, Conversation, Reading Lessons, French-English and English-French Vocabularies, a Synopsis of the Grammatical Rules, etc. (*Drawn up according to the requirements of the First Stage, and adopted by the School Boards for London, and many other large towns, and by the Minister of Education for Canada, etc. etc.*)

New Edition. 200 pages, cloth. 10d.

Every lesson is followed by a short dialogue for conversational practice. The volume comprises the whole Accidence. The rules are stated in the clearest possible manner. A chapter on the Philology of the Language, and some interesting pieces for reading and translation, a complete Index and two complete Vocabularies follow the Grammatical portion. Its moderate price and its completeness make it one of the best books for use in our Middle-Class and National Schools and other large establishments. (See 'CRITICAL OPINIONS' on following pages.)

ONE HUNDRED AND FIFTEEN SUPPLEMENTARY EXERCISES TO 'THE FIRST FRENCH BOOK.'

With Two Complete Vocabularies. 126 pages, cloth. 10d.

THE SECOND FRENCH BOOK.

Grammar, Exercises, Conversation and Translation, Complete Vocabularies, Examination Papers, etc. etc. (*Drawn up according to the requirements of the Second Stage, and adopted by the School Boards for London and many other large towns, and by the Minister of Education for Canada, etc. etc.*)

New Edition. 212 pages, cloth. 1s.

The First French Book has met with so favourable a reception, both here and in Canada, that the second volume has been got up on exactly the same plan, with the following additions, however, which the Editor trusts will prove useful: 'Idioms and Hints,' Selections for translating from English into French, 'Examination Papers,' 'A Synopsis of the rules contained in the first volume,' and an 'Alphabetical Index.' (See 'CRITICAL OPINIONS' on following pages.)

**The Key to the First and Second French Books, and
to the First Steps in French Idioms.** (See page 6.)

For Teachers only. Cloth, 2s. 6d. net.

Opinions of the Press.

'This little book is a model both of cheapness and completeness. In 200 pages it gives beginners the principal rules of the French accidence, thus enabling them to practise conversation after a very few lessons. M. Bué commences by a list of easy and useful words to be learned by heart; the elementary grammar comes next, each chapter being followed by a vocabulary and two exercises. The reading lessons which terminate the volume are amusing anecdotes of graduated difficulties, and the vocabularies are so compiled as to preclude the necessity of a separate dictionary. The pupil has thus in a very small duodecimo all the help he requires towards a quick and easy mastery of the elements of the French language.'—*School Board Chronicle*.

'M. Bué's "First French Book" is much to be commended. The lessons are very gradual, and the rules are explained with a simplicity that must greatly help both teacher and pupil. At the end of each lesson a short vocabulary, a model exercise, and a conversation are given. At the end of the verbs is a "short chapter for the inquisitive," which is well worth getting up, even by more advanced pupils. The chief merit of elementary books of this kind lies in their arrangement, and in this respect we have seen no better book than M. Bué's.'—*School Guardian*, November 10, 1877.

'This is a book, small as regards size and price, but containing in quantity at least matter which would furnish four far larger and more pretentious volumes. M. Bué's method and treatment are excellent; to any person unacquainted with French, but wishing to study that language, or to any teacher wishing to form classes for its study, we can cordially recommend his work. Books for use in school or class are often compiled by others than teachers, and the result is not always satisfactory. M. Bué is a teacher himself, and his lessons show that he understands the difficulties his brethren may labour under, and the best means by which they can be surmounted. We are glad to learn that the volume under notice has been adopted by the London School Board.'—*The Irish Teachers' Journal*, February 2nd, 1878.

'A handy little volume, which may serve with advantage as an introduction to the study of more elaborate works.'—*The Pictorial World*, October 13, 1877.

'This is one of the best first books to French that has ever been published. The difficulties of the language are presented in a series of exercises and lessons, through which the student is led before he realises that he has really had genuine difficulties presented to him. The vocabularies contained in the book have been selected very skilfully. "A short chapter for the inquisitive" is excellent. There is a French-English vocabulary, containing nearly 1500 words in most frequent use.'—*The Weekly Times*, October 14, 1877.

Opinions of the Press, Head Teachers, etc.—(Continued)

'This is a very excellent little work, and will be welcomed both in school and for private teaching. It bears the impress of an experienced teacher; and is marked with more care in pointing out the peculiarities of the language in construction, idiom, and pronunciation. There is no doubt that it will quite fulfil the author's wish, modestly expressed in the preface, and becoming a "useful and handy Primer."'—*The London and China Express*, October 12, 1877.

'A great deal more of the information needed by a beginner than much larger works often contain will be found in this little pocket grammar and exercise-book. Only an experienced teacher could so well anticipate the preliminary difficulties and remove them from the path of a young linguist as M. Bué has done in his primer.'—*Public Opinion*, November 10, 1877.

'Her Majesty's Inspectors have strongly recommended to us your new series of French Books by M. Bué.'—STRATHAVEN, N.B.

'I am so very pleased with the progress of my eldest scholars in French through the medium of Bué's Class-books, that I have fully decided to discard other and more expensive books as hardly fit to be compared to the above two little volumes.'—(LAMPETER), January 28, 1890.

'Bué's First French Book has been written by a practical teacher, who not only sees the difficulties of his pupils, but has done all he can to remove them. The arrangement of the work is most admirable, the conversational lessons useful, and the examples well graduated. I think that the Synopsis of Grammatical Rules at the end of the book is an important feature, and worthy of special attention.'—HEAD-MASTER (A.C.P.) OF A LONDON BOARD SCHOOL, August 20, 1890.

'I have no hesitation in saying that the compactness, as well as the general arrangement of the work, make it the best work of the kind that has yet come under my notice.'—R. H. G. DUNMURY, March 14, 1884.

'My knowledge of their worth is formed upon the opinion of a friend well versed in French. He says "they are admirable."'—ONE OF H. M. I. OF SCHOOLS.

'Two admirable books.'—ONE OF H. M. I. OF SCHOOLS.

'We have used Bué's First Book for several years with large classes, obtaining splendid results; so that I can speak in confident terms of the excellent character of the book.'—R. W. (B.A.). BERMONDSEY, April 18, 1890.

'It is without doubt the best book for introducing boys of elementary schools to the French language. I have used it myself in teaching large classes with excellent results.'—W. G. W. (HEAD TEACHER, LONDON BOARD SCHOOL), July 22, 1890.

FIRST STEPS IN FRENCH IDIOMS.

Containing an Alphabetical List of Idioms, Explanatory Notes, Examination Papers, and One Thousand English Phrases to be turned into Idiomatic French.

New Edition. 180 pages, cloth. 1s. 6d.

Opinions of the Press

'The present work is designed as an introduction to the *Expressions Idiomatiques Comparées*, and will be found extremely useful for students who wish to become acquainted with colloquial French. The words are arranged in alphabetical order, and the principal idiomatic phrases in which they occur are given, together with an English version. Excellent notes illustrate the origin of the various locutions, and a selection of one thousand sentences serves the purpose of examination tests.'—*School Board Chronicle*.

'One of the commendable characteristics of this little book is that it gives intelligible reasons for idiomatic peculiarities. Another feature which will be found to be a recommendation is the supply of the key-word, which is to be taken into account in rendering English sentences into French. In these two particulars it is the best guide we have met with, and we recommend it to learners as a book they will find pleasure as well as profit in mastering.'—*The British Mail*.

'Every one who has acquired any knowledge of French is ever ready to admit that, perfect as his accent and his knowledge of the *finesse* of the language may be, its idioms are never mastered but by those who have for years lived on the other side of the Channel, and not even by many of these, although after a long study and anxious desire to read, write, and speak French as well as they can their own mother-tongue. M. Bué has indeed grappled, tooth and nail, with this difficulty, by giving as complete a method of instruction for the conquering of this difficulty that could possibly be prepared. So perfect is the grasp of his subject, that he will have the blessings of thousands for having enabled them to overcome an obstacle that has hitherto been deemed and pronounced to be insuperable.'—*Bell's Weekly Messenger*.

The Key to the First and Second Books and to the First Steps in French Idioms.

For Teachers only. Cloth, 2s. 6d. net.

THE ELEMENTARY CONVERSATIONAL FRENCH READER

A Collection of Interesting Narratives adapted for Use in Schools, with Conversations, Examination Questions, Notes, and a complete French-English Vocabulary.

New Edition. 80 pages, crown 8vo., limp cloth. 6d.

CRITICAL OPINIONS.

'M. Bué states truly enough that the maximum amount of reading and translation and the minimum amount of grammar is the method of teaching languages now adopted, and certainly it is a wise one; as few things more absurd than the ancient grammars were ever invented. In his "Elementary French Reader" he has kept the rule in mind. The book consists of thirty-eight easy French prose extracts. To each is appended a set of questions and a few sentences of conversation founded on the lessons. Brief notes and a vocabulary complete the volume.'—*The National Observer*, September 12th, 1891.

'It should be of great practical help in acquiring a real and easy hold by conversational methods, of the language.'—*Scotsman*, September 7th, 1891.

'Should be a very useful reading-book for Junior Classes.'—*Northern Whig*.

'This little volume consists of a collection of short anecdotes, either written in a form of a conversation or followed by a short dialogue. Each piece is further followed by a simple grammatical question bearing on the text. Whilst the author has been careful to be thoroughly simple, he has not forgotten to aim at practical utility as well, and his book can scarcely fail to give satisfaction to teachers who prefer exercises in conversation to grammatical "drill" as a first step to the study of the French language.'—*Glasgow Herald*, September 2nd,

'Excellentlly arranged.'—*Lloyd's Weekly London News*, September 27th, 1891.

'I consider your "Elementary Conversational French Reader" a most interesting help to the students, and shall introduce it in the above evening classes.'—W. B., Head Teacher, London Board School, August 31st, 1891.

'I think it a most excellent little work—as all M. Bué's are.'—R. H. C., Head Teacher, London Board School, September 16th, 1891.

'I have much pleasure in stating that we have used Bué's First French Book, and found it excellent. This little book bears the impress of the same master-hand. The grammar and other questions are capital, and within the grasp of those pupils for whom the book is intended. . . . I trust the book will command a large sale, for it is a valuable addition to the French literature adapted to the requirements of Junior Schools, and, considering the amount of matter in it, is remarkably cheap.'—T. P., Head Teacher, London Board School. September 2nd, 1891.

THE NEW CONVERSATIONAL FIRST FRENCH READER.

A collection of interesting narratives, adapted for use in Schools, with a List of the difficult words to be learned by heart, Conversation, Examination Questions, and a complete French-English Vocabulary.

New Edition. 224 pages, cloth. 10d.

The above small volume will prove to be one of the most useful readers for beginners. The stories are chosen from favourite subjects. Each story is followed by a Conversation and some Examination Questions relating to the story.

The 'Conversations' are intended as a guide for the pupil; they will show him how to avoid the abrupt 'oui' and 'non,' and how to frame sentences in answer to his master's questions.

The master can, of course, vary his questions to any extent.

It is necessary to draw the pupil's attention to the more difficult words which occur in the piece he is translating, in order that he may know their meaning again when he meets with them elsewhere. The List of Words placed at the beginning of the book may be used in various ways for that purpose.

OPINIONS OF THE PRESS.

'The idea which has suggested the "New Conversational First Reader" is excellent, and M. Bué has realised it with greatest success. The pieces selected for translation are carefully graduated in point of difficulty, and the conversations which follow each extract are useful both with the view of immediate application and as models for other exercises of the same kind. The examination questions leave nothing to be desired, and the concluding vocabulary is very complete.'

GUSTAVE MASSON, B.A.

HARROW.

'The idea is well carried out, and M. Bué displays a practical knowledge of the wants of English boys studying the language.'—*Daily Chronicle*.

GERMAN GRAMMARS AND EXERCISE BOOKS.

Becker, The First German Book. Grammar, Exercises, Conversation, Reading Lessons, and Translation. With a List of useful Words to be committed to Memory, and a comprehensive German-English and English-German Vocabulary, by the Rev. A. L. BECKER, *Member of the Philological Society of London*. New edition, printed in the new German Official Spelling. 184 pages. Cloth, 1s.

'It is not often that so perfectly satisfactory a first book as this comes in our way. Though it is strictly confined to the essential elements of the language, these are so clearly stated and so admirably arranged that, provided the lessons are, as the author requires, "thoroughly mastered," a good practical knowledge may be acquired. The classification of nouns and verbs is at once theoretically correct and practically easy.'—*The Athenæum*.

— **One Hundred Supplementary Exercises** to the 'First German Book,' with German-English and English-German vocabularies. Cloth, 1s.

'Many teachers have requested me to publish a number of Supplementary Exercises to the *First German Book*, and this little book, which contains over one thousand sentences on all the chapters of that German Primer, is confidently expected to supply the desideratum. Many useful words have been introduced into these exercises, and the examples on the Adjectives, Numerals, Verbs, and Adverbs will be found very much fuller than those in the *First Book*.'—*Extract from PREFACE*.

— **Key to the 'First German Book' and the 'Hundred Supplementary Exercises.'** (*For Teachers and Private Students only.*) Cloth, 2s. 6d.

Meissner, Dr. A. L., The Public School German Grammar. With Exercises, Composition and Conversation, a List of Irregular Verbs, and two complete Vocabularies, by A. L. MEISSNER, M.A., Ph.D., D.Lit., *Librarian and Professor of Modern Languages in Queen's College, Belfast*, etc. Revised Edition, printed in the new Official Spelling. 434 pages. Crown 8vo. Cloth, 3s. 6d.

'Instead of starting off with the declensions of nouns and adjectives, and the many difficulties which they present, and requiring the pupil to master long list of exceptions, which is enough to disgust him with the language for ever, Dr. Meissner introduces him at once to the simple tenses of the auxiliary verbs. The extracts for translation and conversation are also arranged on a definite and intelligent system. Instead of being mere collections of words strung together with utter disregard of sense, or at the best vulgar and hackneyed anecdotes, these exercises are extracts chosen from modern German authors, with a view to imparting some information about Germany and the Germans. The type is clear and legible, a great improvement on the old style of German school book.'—*Saturday Review*.

GERMAN CONVERSATION, DIALOGUES, IDIOMS, ETC.

Lange, Easy German Dialogues. Easy Sentences and practical Conversations on every-day Subjects. Specially compiled for Beginners and Young People, by F. LANGE, Ph.D., etc. 80 pages. Crown 8vo. Cloth, 9d.

A special feature is the introduction of vocabularies, giving on one page the meaning of the words which occur in the dialogue on the opposite side. This is a judicious arrangement, and one which should materially add to the practical utility of the carefully-compiled manual.'—*Glasgow Herald*.

Richard and Kaub's New English and German Dialogues. Containing Classified List of Words in frequent use, Practical Phrases and Dialogues on Subjects incidental to Travelling, Visiting, Shopping, etc. Correspondence, Colloquial Idioms, Comparative Tables of Monies, Weights, and Measures, etc. etc. 240 pages. Crown 16mo. Cloth, 1s. 6d.

Richard and Kaub's New English and German Word Book, including comprehensive Lists of Words in frequent use. 80 pages. Crown 16mo. Cloth, 6d.

Becker, First Steps in German Idioms. An Alphabetical List of Idioms, with Notes, Examination Papers, and one Thousand English Phrases, to be turned into Idiomatic German, by the Rev. A. L. BECKER. 194 pages. Cloth, 1s. 6d.

'Contains a considerable number of the more common German Idioms arranged in alphabetical order. Where necessary, explanatory notes have been added, and a number of examination papers further supply convenient and systematic practice. Altogether the book appears to have been drawn up with care and due regard to practical utility, and should, therefore, produce satisfactory results.'—*Glasgow Herald*.

Koop, Dictionary of English Idioms, with their equivalent German. About 4000 Phrases and Idioms, carefully selected and arranged in Alphabetical order. 156 pages. Crown 8vo. Cloth, 2s. 6d.

Krueger, Conversational German Lessons. An entirely New Method, specially adapted for Self-Instruction. 86 pages. Small 8vo. Cloth, 1s. 6d.

Meissner, Practical Lessons in German Conversation. A Companion to all German Grammars, and a useful Manual for Candidates for Examinations, by A. L. MEISSNER, M.A., Ph.D., D.Lit., etc. Crown 8vo. 260 pages. Cloth, 2s. 6d.

'All who take an interest in German will do well to make acquaintance with the work. They will find it instructive and valuable not merely for the German exercises, which are so arranged as to form a lesson for each day, but for the knowledge it contains of German towns, railways, steamboats, theatres, newspapers, besides having a collection of anecdotes, which are pleasant reading and inform the reader of many subjects which he will do well to remember. . . . There is no better companion for a tour in Germany than this.'—*Northern Whig*.

SPANISH WORKS.

First Spanish Book. Grammar, Conversation, Translation, List of Useful Words and Vocabulary. Based upon Hugo's *Simplified System*. 250 pages. Cloth . . . 2 0

'The stereotyped wording of old-time grammars has been cast to the winds, and only such rules and exceptions as would be given by a practical modern instructor have been presented to the learner.'—*South American Journal*.

— **Key to the Same.** Limp Cloth 1 6

First Steps in Spanish Idioms. An Alphabetical List of Idioms, Notes, Exam. Papers, and a Selection of English Phrases to be turned into Idiomatic Spanish. 120 pp. Cl. 2 0

'... simple, practical, and conveniently arranged, and may be used with advantage in private study. The printing is clear, and the get-up neat and tasteful.'—*Aberdeen Journal*.

— **Key to the Same.** Limp Cloth 1 6

New Spanish-English Dialogues for Travellers and Students. Including Vocabulary of Words of Daily Occurrence, Elements of Conversation, Practical Dialogues, etc., etc. By Prof. TOLRÁ Y FORNES. 400 pp. Demy 16mo. Cl. 2 0

'A useful companion and an excellent supplement to the grammar, and so used, would enable the student to speak the language, soon and readily.'—*Educational News*.

Salvo, a New Practical and Easy Method of Learning the Spanish Language. Including Rules for Pronunciation, Lessons, Models of Letters, Idiomatic Phrases, Dialogues, etc. 216 pages. Crown 8vo. Cloth . . . 3 0

— **Key to the Exercises in Same** 1 6

— **Spanish and English Idiomatic Phrases and Dialogues.** Including Vocabularies of Useful Words, Familiar Conversations, Idioms, Spanish Moneys, with English Equivalents, etc. etc. 160 pages. Small 8vo. Cloth . 2 0

Echo of Spoken Spanish. Practical Conversations on Topics of Interest, introducing numerous Idiomatic Expressions in Constant Use. Arranged for Reading Purposes, Vivá-voce Exercises, and Practice in Fluent Speaking, with English Translation. 206 pages. Cr. 8vo. Cl. 3 0

Cervantes, El Cautivo, from *Don Quixote*, with Explanatory Notes and Vocabulary. By Prof. E. TOLRÁ Y FORNES. 120 pages. Crown 8vo. Cloth. 2 0

Moratin, A de, El sí de las Niñas. With Notes and Vocabulary by Prof. E. TOLRÁ Y FORNES. Cr. 8vo. Cl. 2 0

Morceaux choisis des Classiques Espagnols. Selections from Eminent Spanish Authors of the 16th, 17th, 18th, and 19th Centuries. With Introduction, Biographies and Notes in French, by HERNANDEZ and LEROY. 340 pp. 16mo. Bds. 2 0

BIBLIOTECA ITALIANA.

A New Series of Standard Works by Favourite Authors, edited with Notes and comprehensive Italian-English Vocabularies, for use in Schools and for Private Students, by Rev. A. C. CLAPIN, M.A., *St. John's College, Cambridge, and Bachelier des lettres of the University of France.*

Price per Volume in Paper Cover, 1s.

'We are glad to see this praiseworthy and highly successful attempt to provide the English-Italian student with annotated copies of some of the standard works of modern Italian literature. Such books are very much wanted, and the volumes announced by Messrs. Hachette will no doubt be welcomed with great satisfaction by those for whose use they are intended. The concise notes at the foot of each page and the general vocabularies provide the young student with just the aid he needs.'—*The Schoolmaster.*

ALFIERI.—*Oreste.* Tragedia in cinque atti.

AMICIS.—*Gli Amici di Collegio. Una Medaglia.* Novelle.

CARCANO.—*La madre e il figlio.* Novelle.

CARCANO.—*Memorie d'un fanciullo.—Il Cappellano della Rovella.* Novelle.

is very simple, they may s
of Italian.'—*The Graphic.*

CASTELNUOVO.—*La Gamba di Giovannino. La Democrazia della Signora Cherubina. Due Ore in Ferrovia. La Pagina Eterna.* Novelle.

GOLDONI.—*Il burbero benefico.* Commedia in tre atti in prosa.

GOLDONI.—*Un curioso accidente.* Commedia in tre atti in prosa.

'Goldoni, the Molière of Italy, wrote about 150 comedies—all full of sparkling wit and telling repartee. The *Curioso Accidente* being written—as most of his plays—in prose, may be highly recommended to those wishing to acquire facility in speaking Italian. This cheap and well-printed edition of the masterpieces of Italian literature will prove a great boon to teachers, as well as to private students.'—*The Aberdeen Journal.*

GOLDONI.—*Il vero amico.* Commedia in tre atti in prosa.

MAFFEI.—*Merope.* Tragedia in cinque atti.

'For advanced students of Italian no more suitable work could be recommended than *Merope*, with its easy, graceful, and dignified language.'—*The Aberdeen Journal.*

MANZONI. I PROMESSI SPOSI.* Adapted for English Schools. With Grammatical and Explanatory Notes and an Italian-English Vocabulary, by Rev. A. C. CLAPIN, M.A., *St. John's College, Cambridge, and Bachelier des lettres of the University of France.*

Small 8vo. Cloth, 2s.

This School Edition does not give the complete story of *The Betrothed*, up to the time of their marriage, but describes all that befell them up to the time of their flight from their persecutor. It has thus been reduced to suitable dimensions for ordinary school work, and contains the most amusing as well as the most thrilling portions of the whole novel.

